



ROZIER'S HISTORY  
OF THE  
EARLY SETTLEMENT  
OF THE  
MISSISSIPPI VALLEY.



Herman A Rozier  
D

# ROZIER'S HISTORY

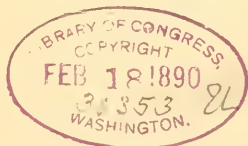
OF THE

EARLY SETTLEMENT

OF THE

# MISSISSIPPI VALLEY.

BY *FIRMIN A. ROZIER.*



ST. LOUIS,

G. A. PIERROT & SON, PRINTERS.

1890.

---

COPYRIGHTED BY  
GEN. FIRMIN A. ROZIER  
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

---

F 351  
R 711

HB 10 Mar. 22/17

## PUBLISHER'S PREFACE.

---

### BIOGRAPHY OF FIRMIN A. ROZIER.

---

SENATOR FIRMIN A. ROZIER was born in the town of Ste. Genevieve, July 31st, 1820, the year and the month in which the State government was organized. He is of French parentage, and is an honorable relic of the old French population of Missouri. His father was in the French navy, and came to America with Audubon, the famous naturalist, settling first in Philadelphia and afterwards in Kentucky, whence he removed to Ste. Genevieve at an early day. Between 1811 and 1820 his father was engaged in merchandizing at Ste. Genevieve, and made six trips to Philadelphia on horseback. At the present day a single trip of that kind and length is considered sufficient to immortalize a man.

He was educated at St. Mary's College, Perry county, Missouri, then the oldest and leading college in the State, but long since removed to Cape Girardeau. At that time Louisiana and other Southern States sent large delegations of students to St. Mary's. At the age of 17 young Rozier left school and became clerk on the steamer "Vandalia," Capt. Small commanding, plying between St. Louis and New Orleans. After a time he abandoned steamboating and returned to school. In 1841 he engaged in commercial business in St. Louis, and felt the pressure of the great financial crisis. He then entered the law office of Bogy & Hunton. Thence he went to Bardstown, Kentucky, to complete his clas-

sical course, and from there to the Transylvania Law School, at Lexington, Kentucky, where he graduated in 1848, when such men as Chief Justice Robertson, Judge Marshall and Judge Wooley were professors. Two years previous to this, however, he had conceived a love for "the pomp and circumstances of glorious war," and through the influence of Thomas H. Benton, had been appointed captain of the South Missouri Guards, a company numbering 115 picked men. With his company he started to join Fremont's expedition to California, and proceeded as far as Fort Leavenworth, where the severity of the winter detained them and prevented their venturing upon the plains, and they were eventually mustered out. Subsequently Capt. Rozier was appointed Major General of the militia of Southeast Missouri, and served for four years. He is therefore entitled justly to the title of General, by which he is best known. This closes his military career.

In 1850 Senator Rozier was a candidate for Congress, his opponents being John F. Darby and Judge Bowlin, who was then Representative. Although he went out of St. Louis with a handsome majority, he was beaten by Darby by a few votes in the district. At that time he represented the Benton side of the political issues of the day. In 1851 he was elected Mayor of Ste. Genevieve, when that city virtually controlled the mineral trade of Southeast Missouri. In 1854 he established at his native town an academy for the education of boys, in which he took a great interest for many years. In 1856 he was elected a member of the Legislature and served ably for two years. In 1858 he was elected President of the branch bank of the Merchants' Bank of St. Louis, located at Ste. Genevieve. In 1872 he was

elected State Senator, without opposition, and has since been chairman of the Committee on Mines and Mining, a position for which he is admirably qualified by reason of his extensive mining operations in St. Francois, Jefferson, and other counties in Southeast Missouri. By his activity and influence he obtained a large amount from the Missouri Legislature, for the prosecution of the State geological survey.

To go back a little, in 1845 Senator Rozier was a delegate to the Southwest Convention, at Memphis, of which John C. Calhoun was president, and made a report, accompanied by a topographical map of the submerged lands of South Missouri, which was approved by the Convention and attracted much attention.

#### SENATOR ROZIER AS AN ORATOR.

Just before a vote was taken in the Senate on the transfer of the effects of the State Geological Board to the Rolla School of Mines, Senator Rozier took occasion to make one of the most practical, sensible, and interesting speeches of his life. He is a man to begin with who at all times and under all circumstances is a hater of shams and humbugs. The economy that saves at the spigot and loses at the bung-hole gets neither soft nor complimentary words from his vocabulary. He is rigidly honest in everything and as a consequence he is rigidly just. His speech was against the destruction of the Geological Board and it was a master-piece of logic and information. He told what geology had done for Missouri; he pictured the desolate, uncultivated and unsaleable lands until it revealed to the world the secret of the precious metals hid beneath their soil; he traced step by step the entire progress of mineral development

from the first rude drift to the immense foundries and rolling-mills, smelting-works and blast furnaces now thick at Carondelet and increasing annually; he gave by decades, beginning with 1850, the increase in taxable wealth, in population, in public improvements of all kinds, and he made such an application of his facts and figures that if the Senators who heard the speech had been but half as liberal as the people who are interested and who pay two-thirds of the entire taxes of the State, they would have increased the usefulness and working facilities of the Geological Board, instead of destroying both and absolutely. However, a better, a truer, a more eloquent, and a more praiseworthy fight against large odds no man ever made than Firmin A. Rozier. The position he took, too, was eminently characteristic of the man, being lofty, unassailable, and full of a thorough knowledge of the subject, and any amount of Missouri common-sense.

Senator Rozier always had an historical taste, and his intercourse with the pioneers of the country, has given him good opportunities to study their habits and history, while this work which he presents to the public is founded on the records of our courts, and the early writers of the history of the early settlement of the Great West.



## PART I.

### THE FRENCH DOMINION IN NORTH AMERICA.—HOW ACQUIRED AND LOST.

My purpose is to speak of the glorious deeds of the noble sons of France in North America, in their explorations of the basin of the St. Lawrence River, the great western lakes, and the occupancy of the valley of the magnificent Father of Waters. As early as 1504 the French seamen from Brittany and Normandy visited the fisheries of Newfoundland and Nova Scotia. These bold and daring men traversed the ocean, through the dangers of ice and storms, to pursue the occupation of fishery, an enterprise which to-day has developed into one of gigantic magnitude.

France not long after this commissioned James Cartier, a distinguished mariner, to explore America. In 1535, in pursuance of his orders, he planted the "Lilies of France" on the shores of the New World, on the banks of the St. Lawrence. He was followed by other adventurous spirits, and among them the immortal Samuel Champlain, a man of great enterprise, who founded Quebec in 1608. Champlain ascended the

Sorel ; explored Champlain Lake, which bears his name to-day. He afterwards penetrated the forests, and found his grave on the bleak shores of Lake Huron.

He was unsurpassed for bravery, indefatigable in industry, and was one of the leading spirits in explorations and discoveries in the New World.

In the van of explorations on this continent were found the courageous and pious Catholic missionaries, meeting dangers and death with a crucifix upon their breasts, breviary in hand, whilst chanting their matins and vespers, along the shores of our majestic rivers, great lakes and unbroken forests. Their course was marked through the trackless wilderness by the carving of their emblems of faith upon the roadway, amidst perils and dangers, without food but pounded maize, sleeping in the woods without shelter, their couch being the ground and rock. Their beacon light, the cross, which was marked upon the oak of the forest in their pathway.

After these missionaries had selected their stations of worship, the French hunters, "coureurs des bois," voyagers and traders, opened their traffic with the savages. France, when convenient and expedient, erected a chain of forts along the rivers and lakes, in defense of Christianity and commerce.

## FRENCH MISSIONARIES.

France, from 1608, acquired on this continent a territory extensive enough to create a great empire. It was at that time untrod by the foot of the white man, and inhabited by roving tribes of the red man. As early as 1615, we find Father Le Carron, a Catholic priest, in the forests of Canada, exploring the country for the purpose of converting the savages to the Christian religion. The following year he is seen on foot traversing the forests among the Mohawks, and reaching the rivers of the Otteways. He was followed by other missionaries along the basin of the St. Lawrence and Kennebeck rivers, where some men met their fate in frail barks, whilst others perished in the storms of the dreadful wilderness.

In 1635 we find Father Jean Brebeuf, Daniels and Gabriel Lallemand leaving Quebec with a few Huron braves to explore Lake Huron, to establish chapels along its banks, from which sprang the villages of St. Joseph, St. Ignatius, and St. Louis. To reach these places it was necessary to follow the Ottawa river through a dangerous and devious way to avoid the Mohawks, Oneidas, Cayugas, Senecas and Iroquois, forming a confederacy as the "Five Nations," occupying a territory then known as the New York colony, who were continually at war with the Hurons, a tribe of Indians inhabiting Lake Huron territory.

### SISTERS OF CHARITY.

As early as 1639 three Sisters of Charity from France arrived at Quebec, dressed in plain black gowns with snowy white collars, whilst to their girdle hung the rosary. They proceeded to the chapel, led by the Governor of Canada, accompanied by braves and warriors, to chant the Te Deum. These holy and pious women, moved by religious zeal, immediately established the Ursuline convent for the education of girls. In addition to this the king of France and nobility of Paris endowed a seminary in Quebec for the education of all classes of persons. A public hospital was built by the generous duchess of D'Aiguillon, with the aid of Cardinal Richelieu, for the unfortunate emigrants, for the savages of all tribes, and afflicted of all classes. A missionary station was established as early as 1641, at Montreal, under a rude tent, from which has grown the large city of to-day, with its magnificent cathedral and churches, its massive business houses, and its commerce.

### FESTIVAL OF THE DEAD.

The tribes of Huron Lake and neighboring savages, in 1641, met on the banks of the Iroquois Bay to celebrate the "Festival of the Dead." The bones and ashes of the dead had been gath-



INDIANS WATCHING THE APPROACH OF CARTIER'S FLEET.



ered in coffins of bark, whilst wrapped in magnificent furs, to be given an affectionate sepulchre. At this singular festival of the savages the chiefs and braves of different tribes chanted their low, mournful songs, day and night, amidst the wails and groans of their women and children. During this festival appeared the pious missionaries, in cassocks, with beads to their girdle, sympathizing with the red men in their devotion to the dead, whilst scattering their medals, pictures of our Savior and blessed and beautiful beads, which touched and won the hearts of the sons of the forest. What a beautiful spectacle to behold, over the grave of the fierce warriors, idolatry fading before the Son of God. Father Charles Raymbault and the indomitable Isaac Joques in 1641 left Canada to explore the country as far as Lake Superior. They reached the Falls of St. Mary's and established a station at Sault-Ste.-Marie, where were assembled many warriors and braves from the great West, to see and hear these two apostles of religion and to behold the cross of Christianity. These two missionaries invoked them to worship the true God. The savages were struck with the emblem of the cross and its teachings, and exclaimed, "We embrace you as brothers; come and dwell in our cabins."

When Father Joques and his party were returning from the Falls of St. Mary's to Quebec they were attacked by the Mohawks, who massacred the chief and his braves, who accompanied

him, whilst they held Father Joques in captivity, showering upon him a great many indignities, compelling him to run the gauntlet through their village. Father Brussini at the same time was beaten, mutilated, and made to walk barefooted through thorns and briars and then scourged by a whole village. However, by some miraculous way they were rescued by the generous Dutch of New York, and both afterwards returned to France. Father Joques again returned to Quebec, and was sent as an envoy amongst the "Five Nations." Contrary to the savage laws of hospitality, he was ill-treated, and then killed as an enchanter, his head hung upon the skirts of the village and his body thrown into the Mohawk river. Such was the fate of this courageous and pious man, leaving a monument of martyrdom more enduring than the pyramids of Egypt.

#### A MEMORABLE CONVENTION.

The year 1645 is memorable, owing to a congress held by France and the "Five Nations," at the Three Rivers, in Canada. There the daring chiefs and warriors and the gallant officers of France met at the great council-fires. After the war-dance and numerous ceremonies the hostile parties smoked the calumet of peace. The Iroquois said: "Let the clouds be dispersed and the sun shine on all the land between us." The Mohawks exclaimed: "We have thrown the



hatchet so high into the air and beyond the earth that no man on earth can reach to bring it down. The French shall sleep on our softest blankets, by the warm fire that shall be kept blazing all night." Notwithstanding the eloquent and fervent language and appearance of peace, it was of but short duration, for soon the cabin of the white man was in flames, and the foot-print of blood was seen along the St. Lawrence, and once more a bloody war broke out, which was disastrous to France, as the Five Nations returned to the allegiance of the English colonies.

The village of St. Joseph, near Huron Lake, on the 4th of July, 1648, whilst her warriors were absent, was sacked and its people murdered by the Mohawks. Father Daniel, who officiated there, whilst endeavoring to protect the children, women and old men, was fatally wounded by numerous arrows and killed. Thus fell this martyr in the cause of religion and progress.

The next year the villages of St. Ignatius and St. Louis were attacked by the Iroquois. The village of St. Ignatius was destroyed and its inhabitants massacred. The village of St. Louis shared the same fate. At the latter place Fathers Brebeuf and Lallemand were made prisoners, tied to a tree, stripped of their clothes, mutilated, burnt with fagots and rosin bark and then scalped. They perished in the name of France and Christianity.

Father de la Ribourde, who had been the com-

panion of La Salle on the Griffin and who officiated at Fort Creve-Cœur, Ill., whilst returning to Lake Michigan, was lost in the wilderness. Afterwards it was learned he had been murdered in cold blood by three young warriors, who carried his prayer-book and scalp as a trophy up north of Lake Superior, which afterwards fell into the hands of the missionaries. Thus died this martyr of religion, whose head had become bleached with seventy winters, after ten years' devotion in the cabins of the savages. Such was also the fate of the pious Father Rine Mesnard, on his mission to the southern shore of Lake Superior, where in after years his cassock and breviary were kept as amulets among the Sioux.

Despite these atrocities, the noble missionaries never retraced their steps, and new troops pressed forward to take their places. They still continued to explore our vast country. The history of their labors, self-sacrifice and devotion is connected with the origin of every village or noted place in the North and great West.

France ordered by Colbert, its great minister, that an invitation be given to all tribes west for a general congress. This remarkable council was held in May, 1671, at the Falls of St. Mary's. There were found the chiefs and braves of many nations of the West, decorated in their brightest feathers and furs, while the French officers glistened with their swords and golden epaulets. In their midst stood the undaunted missionaries from

all parts of the country. In this remarkable congress rose a long cedar cross, and upon a staff the colors of France.

In this council, after many congratulations offered, and the war dances, the calumet was smoked and peace declared. France secured here the friendship of the tribes and dominion over the great West.

### MARQUETTE AND JOLIET.

Marquette, while on his mission in the West, leaves Mackinac on the 13th of May, 1673, with his companion Joliet and five Frenchmen and two Indian guides, in two bark canoes freighted with maize and smoked meat to enter into Lake Michigan and Green Bay until they reached Fox river in Illinois, where stood on its banks an Indian village occupied by the Kickapoos, Mascontins and Miamis, where the noble Father Allonez officiated. Marquette in this village preaches and announces to them his object of discovering the great river. They are appalled at the bold proposition. They say: "Those distant nations never spare the strangers; their mutual wars fill their borders with bands of warriors. The great river abounds in monsters which devour both men and canoes. The excessive heat occasions death."

From Fox river across the portage with the canoes they reach the Wisconsin river. There

Marquette and Joliet separated with their guides, and, in Marquette's language: "Leaving us alone in this unknown land in the hands of Providence," they float down the Wisconsin whose banks are dotted with prairies and beautiful hills, whilst surrounded by wild animals and the buffalo. After seven days' navigation on this river, their hearts bound with gladness on beholding on the 17th day of June, 1673, the broad expanse of the great Father of the Waters, and upon its bosom they float down. About 60 leagues below this they visit an Indian village. Their reception from the savages was cordial. They said: "We are Illinois, that is, we are men. The whole village awaits thee; thou shall enter in peace our cabins." After six days' rest on the couch of furs, and amidst abundance of game, these hospitable Illinois conduct them to their canoes, whilst the chief places around Marquette's neck the calumet of peace, being beautifully decorated with the feathers of birds.

Their canoe again ripples the bosom of the great river (Mississippi), when further down they behold on the high bluffs and smooth rock above (now Alton), on the Illinois shore, the figures of two monsters painted in various colors, of frightful appearance, and the position appeared to be inaccessible to a painter. They soon reached the turbid waters of the Missouri, and thence floated down to the mouth of the Ohio.

Farther down the river stands the village of

Mitchigamea, being on the west side of the river. When approaching this place its bloody warriors, with their war cry, embark in their canoes to attack them, but the calumet, held aloft by Marquette, pacifies them. So they are treated with hospitality, and escorted by them to the Arkansas river. They sojourn there a short time, when Marquette, before leaving this sunny land, celebrates the festival of the church. Marquette and Joliet then turn their canoe northward to retrace their way back until they reach the Illinois river, thence up that stream, along its flowery prairies. The Illinois braves conduct them back to Lake Michigan, thence to Green Bay, where they arrived in September, 1673.

Marquette for two years officiated along Lake Michigan; afterwards visited Mackinaw; from thence he enters a small river in Michigan (that bears his name), when, after saying mass, he withdraws for a short time to the woods, where he is found dead. Thus died this illustrious explorer and remarkable priest, leaving a name unparalleled as a brave, good and virtuous Christian.

#### LA SALLE AND HENNEPIN.

Robert Cavalier La Salle, a native of Normandy, an adventurer from France, arrived in Canada about 1670. Being ambitious to distinguish himself in making discoveries on this continent he

returned to France to solicit aid for that purpose. He was made chevalier upon the condition that he would repair Fort Frontenac, located on Lake Ontario, and open commerce with the savages. In 1677 he again returned to France, when in July, 1678, he, with Chevalier Tonti his lieutenant, and 30 men, left La Rochelle for Quebec and Fort Frontenac. Whilst at Quebec an agreement was made by the governor of Canada with La Salle to establish forts along the northern lakes. At this time, he undertook with great activity to increase the commerce of the West, by building a bark of ten tons to float on Lake Ontario.

Shortly afterwards, he built another vessel, known as the Griffin, above Niagara Falls, for Lake Erie, of sixty tons, being the first vessel seen on the northern lakes. The Griffin was launched and made to float on Lake Erie. "On the prow of this ship armorial bearings were adorned by two griffins as supporters"; upon her deck she carried two brass cannons for defense. On the 7th of August, 1679, she spread her sails on Lake Erie, whilst on her deck stood the brave naval commander La Salle, accompanied by Fathers Henepin, Ribourde and Zenoby, surrounded by a crew of thirty voyageurs. On leaving a salute was fired, whose echoes were heard, to the astonishment of the savages, who named the Griffin "the great wooden canoe." This ship pursued her course through Lakes Erie, St. Clair and



MARQUETTE INSTRUCTING THE INDIANS.





Huron to Mackinaw, thence through that strait into Lake Michigan, thence to Green Bay, where she anchored in safety.

The Griffin, after being laden with a cargo of peltries and furs, was ordered back by La Salle to the port from whence she sailed, but unfortunately on her return she was wrecked. La Salle during the absence of the Griffin determined with fourteen men to proceed to the mouth of the Miamies, now St. Joseph, where he built a fort, from which place he proceeded to Rock Fort in La Salle county, Illinois. La Salle hearing of the disaster and wreck of the Griffin, built a fort on the Illinois river and called it Creve-Cœur (broken heart).

This brave man, though weighed down by misfortune, did not despair. He concluded to return to Canada, but before leaving, sends Father Hennepin, with Piscard, Du Guay and Michael Aka, to explore the sources of the Upper Mississippi.

They leave Creve-Cœur February 29, 1680, floating down the Illinois river, reaching the Mississippi March 8, 1680; then explored that river up to the Falls of St. Anthony; from there they penetrated the forests, which brought them to the wigwams of the Sioux, who detained Father Hennepin and companions for some time in captivity. Recovering their liberty, they returned to Lake Superior in November, 1680, thence to Quebec and France.

During the explorations of Father Hennepin, La Salle, with a courage unsurpassed, a constitution of iron, returns to Canada, a distance of 1200 miles, his pathway being through snow, ice and savages along Lakes Michigan, Erie and Ontario. Reaching Quebec, he finds his business in a disastrous condition, his vessels lost, his goods seized and his men scattered. Not being discouraged, however, he returns to his forts in Illinois, which he finds deserted; takes new courage; goes to Mackinaw; finds his devoted friend Chevalier Tonti in 1681, and is found once more on the Illinois river to continue the explorations of the Mississippi, which had been explored by Father Marquette to the Arkansas river, and by Father Hennepin up to the Falls of St. Anthony.

La Salle, from Fort Creve-Cœur, on the Illinois river, with twenty-two Frenchmen, among whom were Father Zenobi and Chevalier Tonti with eighteen savages and two women and three children, float down until they reach the Mississippi on February 6, 1682. They descend this mighty river until they reach its mouth, April 6, 1682, where they are the first to plant the cross and the banners of France. La Salle, with his companions, ascends the Mississippi and returns to his forts on the Illinois; returns again to Canada, and France.

La Salle is received at the French court with enthusiasm. The king of France orders four vessels well equipped to serve him, under Beau-

geau, commander of the fleet, to proceed to the Gulf of Mexico to discover the Balize. Unfortunately for La Salle he fails in discovering it, and they are thrown into the Bay of Matagorda, Texas, where La Salle, with his 280 persons, is abandoned by the commander of the fleet. La Salle here builds a fort ; then undertakes by land to discover the Balize. After many hardships he returns to his fort, and again attempts the same object, when he meets a tragical end, being murdered by the desperate Duhault, one of his men. During the voyage of La Salle, Chevalier Tonti, his friend, had gone down the Mississippi to its mouth to meet him. After a long search in vain for the fleet, he returned to Rock Fort on the Illinois.

After the unfortunate death of La Salle, great disorder and misfortune occurred to his men in Texas. Some wandered amongst the savages, others were taken prisoners, others perished in the woods. However, seven bold and brave men of La Salle's force determined to return to Illinois, headed by Capt. Joutel and the noble Father Anastase. After six months' exploration through the forest and plain they cross the Red river, where they lose one of their comrades. They then moved towards the Arkansas river, where to their great joy, they reached a French fort, upon which stood a large cross, where Couture and Delaunay, two Frenchmen, had possession to hold communication with La Salle. This

brave band, with the exception of young Barthel-emi, proceeded up the Mississippi to the Illinois forts; from thence to Canada.

This terminated La Salle's wonderful explorations over our vast lakes, great rivers and territory, of Texas. He was a man of stern integrity, of undoubted activity and boldness of character, of an iron constitution, entertaining broad views, and a chivalry unsurpassed in the Old or New World.

France, as early as possible, established along the lakes permanent settlements. One was that of Detroit, which was one of the most interesting and loveliest positions, and was settled in 1701 by Lamotte de Cardillac, with one hundred Frenchmen.

#### LOUISIANA.

The discovery and possession of Mobile, Biloxi and Dauphine Island induced the French to search for the mouth of the Mississippi river, formerly discovered by La Salle. Lemoine D'Iberville, a naval officer of talent and great experience, discovered the Balize on the 2d of March, 1699, proceeded up this river and took possession of the country known as Louisiana. D'Iberville returned immediately to France to announce this glorious news. Bienville, his brother, was left to take charge of Louisiana during his absence. D'Iberville returned, when Bienville and St. Denis, with

a force, were ordered to explore Red river and thence to the borders of Mexico. La Harpe also ascended Red river in 1719, and built a fort called Charlotte; also took possession of the Arkansas river; afterwards floated down this river in pirogues, finding on its banks many thriving Indian villages.

France, in September, 1712, by letters patent, granted Louisiana to Crozas, a wealthy Frenchman, who relinquished his rights and power in 1717 to the Company of the West, established by the notorious banker, John Law. Under a fever of great speculations, great efforts were made to advance the population and wealth of Louisiana. New Orleans was mapped out in 1718, and became the important city of Lower and Upper Louisiana. The charter and privileges of the "Company of the West," after its total failure, was resigned to the crown of France in 1731. The country embracing Louisiana was populated by numerous tribes of savages. One of these tribes was known as the Natchez, located on a high bluff, in the midst of a glorious climate, about 300 miles above New Orleans, on the river bank. The Natchez had erected a remarkable temple where they invoked the "Great Spirit," which was decorated with various idols moulded from clay baked in the sun. In this temple burned a living fire, where the bones of the brave were burned. Near it, on a high mound, the chief of the nation, called the Sun, resided, where the

warriors chanted their war songs and held their great council fires. The Natchez had shown great hospitality to the French. The Governor of Louisiana built a fort near them in 1714, called Fort Rosalie. Chopart, afterwards commander of this fort, ill-treated them and unjustly demanded a part of their villages. This unjust demand so outraged their feelings that the Natchez in their anger lifted up the bloody tomahawk, headed by the "Great Sun," attacked Fort Rosalie November 28, 1729, and massacred every Frenchman in the fort and the vicinity. During these bloody scenes the chief amidst this carnage stood calm and unmoved, whilst Chopart's head and those of his officers and soldiers were thrown at his feet, forming a pyramid of human heads. This caused a bloody war, which, after many battles fought, terminated in the total destruction of the Natchez nation. In these struggles, the chief and his 400 braves were made prisoners, and afterwards inhumanly sold as slaves in St. Domingo.

The French declared war in 1735 against the Chickasaws, a warlike tribe, that inhabited the Southern States. Bienville, commander of the French, ordered a réunion of the troops to assemble on the 10th of May, 1736, on the Tombigbee river. The gallant D'Artaquette from Fort Chartres, and the brave Vincennes from the Wabash river, with a thousand warriors, were at their post in time, but were forced into battle on the 20th of May without the assistance of the

other troops, were defeated and massacred. Bienville shortly afterwards, on the 27th of May, 1736, failed in his assault upon the Chickasaw forts, in the Tombigbee, where the English flag waved, and was forced to retreat, with the loss of his cannons, which forced him to return to New Orleans. In 1740 the French built a fort at the mouth of the St. Francois river, and moved their troops in Fort Assumption, near Memphis, where peace was concluded with the Chickasaws.

The oldest permanent settlement on the Mississippi river was Kaskaskia, first visited by Father Gravier, date unknown; but he was in Illinois in 1693. He was succeeded by Fathers Pinet and Bineteau. Pinet became the founder of Cahokia, where he erected a chapel, and a goodly number of savages assembled to attend the great feast. Father Gabriel, who had chanted mass through Canada, officiated at Cahokia and Kaskaskia in 1711.

The missionaries in 1721 established a college and monastery at Kaskaskia. Fort Chartres, in Illinois, was built in 1720; became an important post for the security of the French, and a great protection for the commerce on the Mississippi.

An expedition under Le Sieur to Upper Louisiana about 1702 in search of precious metals, proceeded up as far as St. Croix and St. Peter's rivers, where a fort was built, which had to be abandoned owing to the hostilities of the savages.

## THE MISSOURI.

The French, as early as 1705, ascended the Missouri river to open traffic with the Missouris and to take possession of the country. M. Dutisne, from New Orleans, with a force, arrived in Saline river, below St. Genevieve, moved westward to the Osage river, then beyond this about 150 miles, where he found two large villages located in fine prairies abounding with wild game and buffalo.

## THE SPANISH CARAVAN.

France and Spain in 1719 were contending for dominion west of the Mississippi. Spain in 1720 sent from Santa Fe a large caravan to make a settlement on the Missouri river, the design being to destroy the Missouris, a tribe at peace with France. This caravan, after traveling and wandering, lost their way and marched into the camp of the Missouris, their enemies, where they were all massacred, except a priest, who from his dress, was considered no warrior. After this expedition from Santa Fe upon Missouri, France, under M. DeBourmont, with a force in 1724 ascended the Missouri, established a fort on an island above the Osage river, naming it Fort Orleans. This fort was afterwards attacked and its defenders destroyed—by whom was never ascertained.



## FIRST MINING.

The first mining operations in Upper Louisiana (now Missouri) was by Sieur de Locham on the Merimac river below St. Louis, and supposed to be silver and lead mines. These were worked afterwards under the care of a Spaniard named Antonio and by Renandica, under Renault.

Renault, the agent of the "Company of the West," left France in 1719 under the auspices of this company with 200 miners provided with mining tools. On his passage to New Orleans he touched at St. Domingo, where he purchased 500 slaves, who were afterwards sold to the inhabitants of Upper Louisiana. He then proceeded to Kaskaskia for the purpose of mining in Illinois and Missouri. In 1720, near Fort Chartres, he built a village called St. Philip. Renault crossed the Mississippi and discovered the lead mine around Potosi, which bears his name. He afterwards left for France in 1742.

Farther south, on the St. Francis river, La-Motte, an agent under Renault, discovered the famous "Mine Lamotte." The lead from all these mines was taken first on pack horses; afterward in charrettes (French carts) to St. Genevieve, and from there shipped by river to New Orleans.

## ST. GENEVIEVE.

The town of St. Genevieve was the first permanent settlement west of the Mississippi river by emigrants from France and Canada.

The wars between England and France more or less affected the growth of this continent. The war in 1689, known as "King William's War," was concluded by the treaty of Ryswick, 1697. "Queen Ann's War" terminated by the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, in 1748. These wars gave England supremacy in the fisheries, the possession of the Bay of Hudson, of Newfoundland and all of Nova Scotia.

The French, after years of discovery and explorations, had acquired possession of the St. Lawrence river, the great Western lakes, and the valley of the Mississippi river; and the control of the Missouri river, which was a vast empire of itself, and promised to be one of the most valuable colonies to the crown of France.

THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR FROM 1754 TO  
1763, KNOWN AS THE SEVEN YEARS' WAR.

The struggle between England and France as to their dominion in America commenced at this period. It was a disastrous and bloody war, where both parties enlisted hordes of savages to participate in a warfare conducted in a disgraceful manner to humanity. France, at this time had erected a chain of forts from Canada to the great lakes and along the Mississippi Valley. The English controlled the territory occupied by their English colonies. The English claimed beyond the Alleghany Mountains to the Mississippi river. The French deemed her right to this river indisputable. Virginia had granted to the "Ohio Company" an extensive territory reaching to the Ohio. Dinwiddie, Governor of Virginia, through George Washington, remonstrated against the encroachment of the French. St. Pierre, the French commander, received Washington with kindness and returned an answer, claiming the territory which France occupied. The "Ohio Company" sent out a party of men to erect a fort at the confluence of the Alleghany and Monongahela rivers. These men had hardly commenced work on this fort when they were driven away by the French, who took possession and established "Fort du Quesne."

Washington, with a body of provincials from Virginia, marched to the disputed territory, when a party of French under Jumonville was attacked and all either killed or made prisoners. Washington, after this, erected a fort called Fort Necessity. From there Washington proceeded with 400 men towards Fort du Quesne, where, hearing of the advance of M. DeVilliers with a large force, he returned to Fort Necessity, where, after a short defense, Washington had to capitulate with the honorable terms of returning to Virginia.

On the 4th of July, 1754, the day that Fort Necessity surrendered, a convention of colonies was held at Albany, New York, for a union of the colonies proposed by Dr. Ben. Franklin, adopted by the delegates, but defeated by the English Government. However, at this convention a treaty was made between the colonies and the "Five Nations," which proved to be of great advantage to England. Gen. Braddock, with a force of two thousand soldiers, marched against Fort du Quesne. Within seven miles of this fort he was attacked by the French and Indian allies and disastrously defeated, when Washington covered the retreat and saved the army from total destruction.

Sir William Johnson, with a large force, took command of the army at Fort Edward. Near this fort Baron Dieskau and St. Pierre attacked Col. Williams and troop, where the English were

defeated, but Sir William Johnson coming to the rescue defeated the French, who lost in this battle Dieskau and St. Pierre.

On August 12, 1756, Marquis Montcalm, commander of the French army, attacked Fort Ontario, garrisoned by 1,400 troops, who capitulated as prisoners of war with 134 cannons, several vessels and a large amount of military stores. Montcalm destroyed this fort and returned to Canada.

By the treaty of peace of Aix-la-Chapelle of October, 1748, Acadia, known as Nova Scotia, and Brunswick had been ceded by France to England. When the war of 1754 broke out this territory was occupied by numerous French families. England, fearing their sympathy for France, cruelly confiscated their property, destroyed their humble homes and exiled them to their colonies in the utmost poverty and distress.

In August, 1757, Marquis Montcalm, with a large army, marched on Fort William Henry, defended by 3,000 English troops. The English were defeated, and surrendered on condition that they might march out of the fort with their arms. The savage allies, as they marched out, in an outrageous manner plundered them and massacred some in cold blood, notwithstanding the efforts of the French officers to prevent them.

The military campaign thus far had been very disastrous to the English, which fact created quite a sensation in the colonies and England.

At this critical period the illustrious Mr. Pitt, known as Lord Chatham, was placed at the helm of state on account of his talent and statesmanship, and he sent a large naval armament and numerous troops to protect the colonies.

July 8, 1758, General Abercrombie, with an army of 15,000, moved on Ticonderoga, defended by Marquis Montcalm. After a great struggle the English were defeated with a loss of two thousand killed and wounded.

August, 27, 1758, Colonel Bradstreet, with a force, attacked the French fort—Fort Frontenac, on Lake Ontario, and took it with nine armed vessels, sixty cannons and quantity of stores, whilst Gen. Forbes moved on Fort Du Quesne, and took it, which was afterwards called Pittsburg, in honor of Mr. Pitt.

In 1759 the French evacuated Ticonderoga, Crown Point and Niagara. Gen. Wolf advanced against Quebec, then defended by the gallant Montcalm, where a terrible and bloody battle took place between the two armies. Gen. Wolf was killed and a great number of English officers. When the brave Wolf was told the English were victorious, he said, "I die contented." Montcalm, when told his wounds were mortal, said, "So much the better; I shall not live to see the surrender of Quebec,"—which city surrendered September 18, 1759.

In 1760 another battle was fought near Quebec, the English were driven into their fortifications,

and only relieved by the English squadron. Montreal still contended to the last, when she was compelled to surrender, which gave Canada to the English.

By the treaty of peace, February 10, 1763, France ceded to England all her possessions on the St. Lawrence river, all east of the Mississippi river except that portion south of Iberville river and west of the Mississippi. At the same time all the territory here reserved being west of the Mississippi, and the Orleans territory was transferred to Spain. France, after all her labors, toil and expenditures, and great loss of life, surrendered to England and Spain her great domain in North America.

The history of France, embracing a term of 228 years, is replete with interest and with thrilling events in this country up to 1763, of which I have endeavored to give only an outline.

Notwithstanding France's great loss of her vast territory in America, she afterwards took an active part in favoring the British colonies in their struggle with the English, during the American revolution. She also re-acquired the Louisiana Territory from Spain, to cede it to the United States.

## HISTORY OF FORT CHARTRES, FORT GAGE, AND KASKASKIA.

FORT CHARTRES being established in early times in the far West, on the Mississippi river, bears a past and interesting history. Pierre Duqué Boisbriant was first appointed commander, at the Illinois. He arrived with French troops in the latter part of 1718, at Kaskaskia, Ill. Boisbriant shortly afterwards selected a point on the Mississippi, about fifteen miles above Kaskaskia, where he erected a wooden fort, called Fort Chartres, which was finished in the year 1720, when upon its ramparts the lilies of France were unfurled. The first important arrival at this fort was Philip Francis Renault, director of the mines of the West, with his two hundred miners and a number of slaves from St. Domingo. Shortly afterwards, in 1721, it was visited by the historian Charlevoix, escorted by St. Ange de Belle-Rive, a French officer, with a few French soldiers. The Jesuits at this time had established the parish of St. Anne de Fort Chartres, which induced a number of emigrants to settle near Fort Chartres and Kaskaskia. The first council consisted of Boisbriant, Marc Antoine de La Loire, and Michael Chassin des Ursins, making Fort Chartres the center of civil and mil-



itary government of the Illinois country subject to the French government. This council made large grants of land to different persons in the Illinois. Commandant Boisbriant in 1725 was succeeded by M. de Siette, a captain of the royal army of France; afterwards the command of this fort fell to the lot of St. Ange de Belle-Rive, a brave and gallant officer, who chastised the surrounding savages, which secured peace to the inhabitants. The noble, brave and illustrious Pierre D'Artaquette took command of this fort and Illinois in the year 1734. It was in 1736 he and the Marquis de Vincennes, of the Wabash, with troops from Fort Chartres and the Wabash country, accompanied by a thousand warriors commanded by the great Indian chief Chicago, descended the Mississippi river in a flotilla to the Lower Chickasaw Bluffs, to reach the Tombigbee to make war against the Chickasaw Indians, when on the 20th May, 1736, a terrible and bloody battle took place, where the Illinois troops were defeated and massacred by the Chickasaws. This catastrophe was long mourned by the inhabitants and warriors of the Illinois and Wabash country. After the death of D'Artaquette, Commandant La Buissonnière succeeded him, when in 1739 he was ordered by Bienville, Governor of Louisiana, to organize troops to renew this war, which order he obeyed by descending with a flotilla to the present site of Memphis, where he met Bienville's army. This

warlike expedition terminated in peace without any military glory to the French arms.

Buissonnière returned with his troops in 1740 to the fort. During his commandership Illinois increased rapidly in population and wealth, and a remarkable nucleus of good society was formed at Fort Chartres and Kaskaskia. Many marriages took place amongst the officers at the fort with brilliant young ladies of the Illinois, which were celebrated with great ceremony. After Buissonnière's administration, Benoist St. Clair, captain of a marine company, took charge of the fort for a year or more, when he was replaced by Chevalier de Bertel. During Bertel's time, De La Loire Flanneur acted as civil judge. Chevalier de McCarthy, major of engineers, with troops from France, arrived at Fort Chartres in the latter part of 1751 and took charge, bearing instructions owing to pending difficulties with England, to repair the fort completely, and to protect the territory of France. McCarthy erected nearly a new fort. When finished, about 1755, the war broke out between France and England. This fort "had a stone wall 15 feet high, with loop holes, embrasures and bastions, a large store house, with government house, with iron gates and stone porch, with two rooms of barracks, having an intendant house, guard house, bake house, and prison, all of stone, with a large magazine, with doors of wood and iron, hung in stone doorways, all well-

mounted with cannon, the whole covering over four acres."

Such was this important fort at the commencement of the French and English war. Many officers of this fort distinguished themselves in the service of France on different battle fields. Captain Noyon de Villiers, an officer at Fort Chartres, burning to revenge the death of his brother Jumonville, whom Washington and militia had attacked and killed, at the Great Meadow, in Virginia, requested the Marquis McCarthy, to permit him with his company to proceed to Fort Duquesne. In 1755, he left Fort Chartres, with his men, bearing the flag of France, at the call of the drum, descended the Mississippi, went up the Ohio river, soon reached Fort Duquesne, where he enlisted under his relation, Coulin de Villiers, marched into Virginia, where after an obstinate contest, he compelled Washington and his militia to surrender "Fort Necessity." After this great triumph Captain Villiers returned with his men to Fort Chartres, where the event was highly celebrated. Shortly after, another gallant officer, named Aubry, was ordered by McCarthy to reinforce Fort Duquesne with 400 men. Whilst there he participated in the defeat of the English troops under Braddock near Fort Duquesne, and returned with his troops to Fort Chartres, well equipped, amidst the acclamations of the Illinois troops. This same officer was again sent on an expedition against the far distant Niagara Fort,

to aid in the defense of the French army, who had just met with terrible disasters in Canada, and along the lakes. In the attack on Fort Niagara, the brave Aubry was badly wounded, and great numbers of his soldiers were killed or made prisoners of war. Chevalier McCarthy continued in command until the termination of the French and English war. Noyon de Villiers succeeded McCarthy, who received orders to evacuate the French possessions east of the Mississippi, being, Peoria on the Illinois river, Fort Massac on the Ohio, also Vincennes on the Wabash, and to concentrate their troops at Fort Chartres. He also ordered to be evacuated the French fort at Kansas river and also the one on the Osage river, on the Missouri river.

On the 10th of July 1764 Noyon de Villiers left Fort Chartres with his troops, accompanied by civil officers and a large number of inhabitants, for New Orleans, however leaving St. Ange in command of Fort Chartres, with two lieutenants and forty soldiers, to guard this fort until surrendered to the English, which he did on the 10th of October 1765 to Captain Sterling, an English officer. The reason the English did not take possession of Fort Chartres earlier under the treaty of 1763, was owing to the hostilities to the English by Pontiac and his warriors, who were a terror from the lakes to the Mississippi. Previous to the surrender of Fort Chartres, Pontiac visited this fort with four hundred warriors, to have a

council with St. Ange. The Illinois Indians which surrounded Fort Chartres refused to join Pontiac; he then told them: "Hesitate not, or I destroy you as the fire destroys the grass of the prairie." He further spoke to St. Ange: "Father, we have long wished to see you, to shake hands with thee, and whilst smoking the pipe of peace, to recall the battles in which we fought together against the misguided Indians, and the English dogs. I love the French, and I have come here with my warriors to avenge their wrongs." St. Ange, under his duties, declined, and told Pontiac to make peace, as nothing could be done. Pontiac returned north, but when he heard that Colonel Sterling had taken Fort Chartres, he raved and swore he would take the fort and Sterling's scalp. The English, fearing his valor and power, were induced to get rid of him. Whilst in St. Louis, Pontiac determined to go to Cahokia. St. Ange endeavored to prevent him, but Pontiac's answer was: "I am a man and know how to fight." When at Cahokia, he got drunk, and retired to sing his medicine song, in the meantime, an English merchant bribed a Peoria Indian with a barrel of rum, if he would kill Pontiac, whilst in this state and sleeping. Pontiac was killed, his skull being cleaved by a tomahawk. This outrage roused the savages friendly to Pontiac, which caused the extermination of the Illinois nation.

After the delivery of Fort Chartres, October

10th, 1765, by St. Ange, he and his troops removed to the Post of St. Louis, Missouri. Captain Sterling, shortly after occupying Fort Chartres, died suddenly. He was succeeded in command by Major Frazer from Fort Pitt ; afterwards relieved by Colonel Reed, when Colonel John Wilkins, on the 5th of September, 1768, took command of the fort. At this time a judicial court was established, consisting of seven judges, when the common law was introduced in Illinois.

Owing to floods in the Mississippi in the year 1772, Fort Chartres was abandoned, and the English troops from this fort removed to Kaskaskia and Fort Gage. Previous to this, an old fort which stood on the present site was burnt in October, 1766. Fort Gage was located opposite the town of Kaskaskia, on the eastern bank of the Kaskaskia river, in Illinois.

The headquarters of the English in the Illinois country was at Fort Chartres, from October 10th, 1765, to 1772 ; afterwards at Fort Gage and Kaskaskia, until it was captured by Colonel Rogers Clark for the Commonwealth of Virginia, July 4th, 1778, whilst under the command of Rocheblave, under the English flag.

## KASKASKIA.

Kaskaskia was established as early as 1686 by Catholic missionaries and a few Frenchmen.

When the English took possession in 1765, Kaskaskia contained about sixty-five families, and a number of traders, *coureurs des bois*, and other casual people and many slaves. At this period the Jesuits had a college and church, with a plantation under good cultivation, containing 240 acres. It was well-stocked, with a large brewery attached to it.

Near Fort Chartres in 1765 existed a village with a parish church dedicated to St. Anne, and served by a Franciscan friar. Its population consisted of forty families.

## PRAIRIE DU ROCHER.—KAHOKIA.

Prairie Du Rocher, a small town, then was located about four miles below Fort Chartres, about ten miles above Kaskaskia, containing twelve dwelling houses inhabited with about as many families. This village was located along the Rock Bluff. At this period existed also Kahokia, a village on the Mississippi river, about six miles below the present city of St. Louis. It was located in a large bend of the river. It

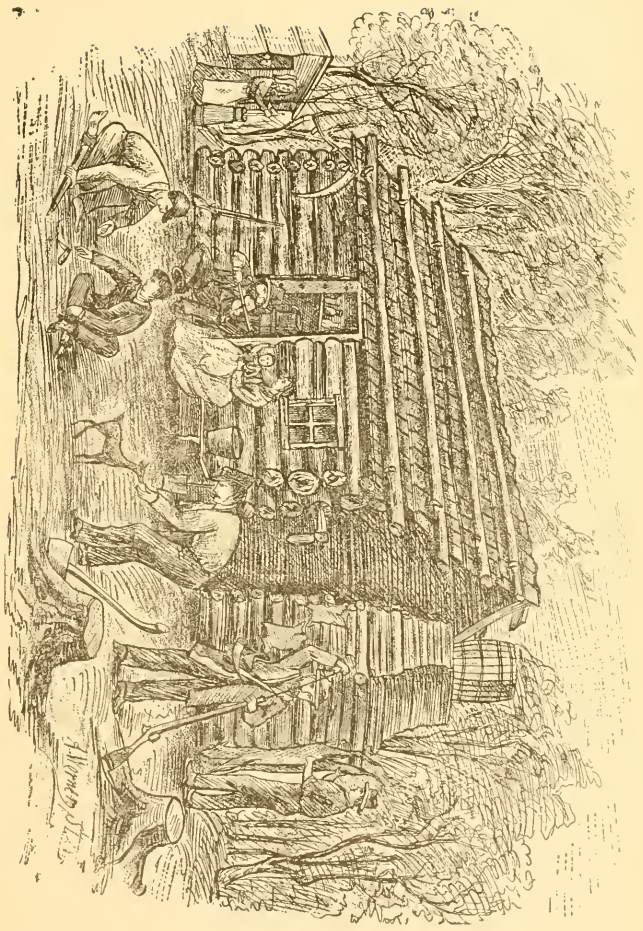
was on low land, but remarkably productive and rich in character; this latter place was established shortly after Kaskaskia. Kahokia had a church, and contained about forty-five French families. Adjoining this village the mission of St. Sulpice, a catholic organization, with a good school, also owned a good farm, with a large and convenient house and out-houses, and they cultivated the soil mostly with slaves; this farm was well stocked. In the center of Kahokia stood a wooden fort, for the safety of its inhabitants in times of danger from the surrounding Indians. Fort Chartres in 1772 owing to the great flood was entirely abandoned, then went into ruin. Gov. Reynolds, who visited this fort in 1802, states—

“ It presented a most striking contrast between a savage wilderness filled with wild beasts and reptiles, and the remains of one of the largest and strongest fortifications on the continent. Large trees were growing in the houses, which once contained the elegant and accomplished French officers and soldiers; cannons, snakes and bats were sleeping together in peace in and around the Fort.”

Shortly before and after the English took possession of Illinois in 1765, a great many of the old French families removed to the west side of the Mississippi river, under the ‘Lilies of France.’ The French families in Illinois, previous to this



EARLY PIONEER LIFE.





period, were a happy and contented people, but their great dislike to the English government, caused them to sacrifice their property and abandon their fire-sides and homes. They removed mostly to St. Genevieve and St. Louis, under a government more congenial to their tastes and habits.

## PART II.

### EXPLORATION OF THE MISSOURI BY THE FRENCH IN 1705.

THE Missouri River, which flowed through an immense wilderness, was not known to any of the Europeans until it was explored by the French as early as 1705. Chevalier M. Lesieur was ordered by Governor D'Iberville, of Louisiana, on a mining expedition to the Upper Mississippi in 1702, with a few Indian guides, accompanied by eminent metallurgists and miners, to search for precious metals. They reached St. Peters and Green Rivers, now Illinois, where they established a fort called "L'Huillier," which excited the hostility of the Indian tribes, that caused the expedition to abandon the country.

This party descended the Mississippi, when their attention was called to the Missouri River, and they determined to ascend this turbulent stream, which they did as far as the Kansas (now called Kaw) River in the year 1705. The banks of the Missouri were then mostly occupied by a

powerful tribe of savages known as the "Missouris," with whom the French formed an alliance, and established a trading post among them for the purpose of mining and the traffic in furs and peltries.

By this exploration the French took possession of the Missouri river and claimed dominion over it.

#### SANTA FE CARAVAN, 1720.

France and Spain were in a continual contest for the possession of the Mississippi Valley, which eventually created a war between them, as early as 1719. The Spaniards endeavored to protect their possessions beyond the Mississippi river. The French, having possession of the Missouri river as early as 1705, the Spaniards concluded to destroy their settlements on this river, when, in 1720, they organized a large caravan at Santa Fé for that purpose. This Spanish caravan consisted of soldiers, men, priests and women, comprising Spaniards, Mexicans and a mixed race of Indians, with a large number of horses and cattle. This military organization was grotesque in the extreme in dress and equipage; it looked more like an army of clowns than a military invasion. This large caravan was unacquainted with the route and country, and without proper guides, still they were enthusiastic and determined to take possession of the Missouri. The French

had settled amongst the "Missouris," a powerful tribe of Indians, who then occupied the Missouri and Kansas rivers, and were in friendship and alliance with the French. The Paunee-Indians, were enemies to the French and Missouri, and the caravan expected aid from them, in their assault upon the French and Missouri. The caravan instead of entering the Paunee settlement, unsuspectedly marched into the Missouri's camp. The Spaniards informed the chief of the Missouri, that they came with the purpose to destroy the French and the Missouri. The chief disguised his feelings, and received the Spaniards with hospitality, who distributed arms and ammunition amongst the Missouri; but the chief soon gave orders to his warriors to rally and attack this caravan, which they did, and succeeded in destroying it entirely.

EXPLORATIONS OF THE INTERIOR OF MISSOURI  
BY M. DE DUTISNE IN 1719.

The French authorities in New Orleans, ordered an exploration under M. de Dutisne, of the interior of Missouri, which was then occupied by different tribes of savages. M. De Dutisne after ascending the Mississippi, disembarked with his force at the mouth of the Saline river, a stream about 10 miles below the town of St. Genevieve. From there he took his course northwest, through

its mineral country, and over a rocky, broken and timber region to reach the Osage river, a distance of about 300 miles. About five miles from this river he came upon a large village occupied by the Osage Indians, containing about 100 cabins and huts. After visiting this village he proceeded further west about 120 miles to a prairie country, abounding in game, where he found two large Indian villages which seemed occupied by the Poncas, a warlike tribe, provided with a great number of horses. Then this expedition proceeded to the Missouri river, when M. De Dutisne took formal possession of the country and erected posts with the king's arms, as a testimony of their claims.

FORT ORLEANS, ON AN ISLAND IN THE MISSOURI  
RIVER.—1724.

Owing to the Santa Fe Caravan of the Spaniards in 1720, on the Missouri, the French were compelled to protect their interest and dominion on the Missouri river. A military force was organized at Mobile under Chevalier M. De Bourgmont, de l'ordre Royal et Militaire, who established "Fort Orleans" on an Island in the Missouri river above the Osage river in the year 1724, four years after the Spanish caravan had been entirely destroyed. At this latter period,

the different tribes of Indians, who inhabited Missouri were at war, which was very injurious to the fur trade, and to the French voyagers and traders. Chevalier Bourgmont, with his troops, attempted to establish peace, amongst those tribes of savages, and succeeded after a short time in this laudable object.

For this purpose, Bourgmont with his force, set out from Fort Orleans July 3d, 1721 for Kansas river, where he had invited the Great chiefs of these several tribes to meet, when a large council was held, consisting of the Kansas, Othouez, Aiowez, Osages, and Missouris. Bourgmont and his French troops were received with great pomp and hospitality by these savages and they were entertained by Indian dances and war songs. After much deliberation in council, peace was declared amongst the tribes of Indians, an alliance was formed with the French. At this great council, chevalier Bourgmont induced them to make peace with the Padoucas, a powerful tribe, inhabiting an extensive country between the Missouri and New Mexico, then extending to the Spanish possessions.

For that purpose Bourgmont with the Indian chiefs and warriors, accompanied by three hundred squaws, made an expedition to the camp of the Padoucas ; traversing a country filled with buffalo and game, while the baggage was transported by the squaws and three hundred dogs attached to sledges. When Bourgmont and sol-



diers, with his Indian allies, arrived at the Padoucas camp, they were received with great hospitality and Indian pomp, when a large Indian council was held.

Bourgmont presented to the great chief of the Padoucas a French flag, whilst he distributed a large quantity of goods, amongst all the savages assembled, consisting "of red and blue lemberts, shirts, fusils, gun-powder, balls, muskets, flints, gun-screws, hatchets, looking-glasses, scissors, knives, combs, awls, needles, glasses, brass wire and rings."

The Padoucas were not acquainted with fire-arms. They were greatly surprised and enchanted with the military discipline of the French soldiers.

A general council was held, and peace among the Indian tribes declared, and an alliance made with the French. This expedition to these tribes of Indians and to the Padoucas, was from July 3, to November 1, 1724. The Indian chief, when presented with the Lilies of France, said: "I accept this flag, and my two hundred warriors are at the service of the French." Bourgmont, after establishing peace among these several tribes of Indians, returned to "Fort Orleans." He remained a few months at this fort. After he left it and during his absence this Fort Orleans was destroyed and its soldiers massacred, and, strange to say, it was never ascertained by whom it was attacked and destroyed.

## PART III.

---

### TERRITORY OF LOUISIANA.

#### NEW ORGANIZATION OF LOUISIANA TERRITORY UNDER CROZAT. 1712—1717.

FOR the purpose of improving the commerce and mining operations of the Colony of Louisiana, and to reorganize this Territory, Louis XIV, "the Grand Monarch" of France, made a grant and concession of the same in the year 1712 to the Sieur Crozat, a wealthy and enterprising Frenchman, whilst M. de Lamotte was made its governor in 1713. Crozat, after much labor and toil and a large expenditure of money in mining and commerce, for five years, found that this grant was too extensive and too difficult for him to manage, and surrendered his grant back to the crown of France on the 23d of August, 1717.

Louis XIV having died in 1715, he was succeeded by Louis XV. Being a minor at the time, the Duke of Orleans was made regent of France. Louis XIV, after a glorious reign for years, met eventually with great disasters, after twenty-eight

years of war, left France in a deplorable condition financially, and in a bankrupt state. Louis XV after this organized the "Compagnie des Indes" by "lettres-patentes," in August 1717, with extensive powers and authority over the Louisiana Territory, which Company existed until the year 1731.

During the terrible financial crisis in France, in the reign of Louis XV, there appeared a remarkable person, to take the helm of finances of that bankrupt country. This individual had great wealth, a commanding appearance, talent and genius; he was a Scotchman by birth. This man was the notorious John Law. He was promoted to the head of "the Bank of Circulation," in 1716, and of the "Banque Royale," in 1718. Whilst controlling large commercial operations, he became the controlling spirit of the "Compagnie des Indes," which had the management of the commerce and mining operations of the great "Territory of Louisiana." This last Company contributed a great deal to improve and populate the country from Louisiana to the Canadian country.

The system adopted by France, in an over-issue of paper money, accompanied by a regime of wild speculation in the city of Paris, occasioned an extravagant mode of living, which corrupted the manners of the people and brought on France a terrible financial crisis, which reached its colonies. However, the Territory

of Louisiana under John Law's surveillance greatly increased in wealth and population. John Law's financial failure, which followed, was greatly owing to the corruption of the times and the bankrupt condition of France.

## CESSION BY FRANCE TO SPAIN.

### CESSION BY FRANCE OF THE LOUISIANA TERRITORY TO SPAIN, IN 1762.—THE PARISIAN AND SPANISH CODES IN SAID TERRITORY.

THE laws and customs of Paris were in force in the dominion of France, in North America, before the ceding of her possessions to England by the treaty of Paris, February 10th, 1763, also by cession of the Louisiana Territory to Spain, by secret treaty of November 3d, 1762, not made known until April 12th, 1764.

Don Ulloa, appointed Governor-General of Louisiana by Spain in 1767, arrived at New Orleans, with a company of infantry, to take possession in the name of his Spanish sovereign. He refused to show his authority to the "Superior Council" at New Orleans; and other causes induced the citizens to take up arms against Spain. Governor Ulloa was ordered to leave the city of New Orleans. He soon embarked with his troops on a Spanish vessel, and left the country.

In the meantime, Rios, a Spanish officer, was sent to St. Louis, to take possession of Upper Louisiana. He arrived in St. Louis with a small body of troops on the 11th of August, 1768.

During his stay at St. Louis, he seems to have exercised no civil authority, and only attempted to take possession of the country.

Spain did not actually take possession of the Louisiana Territory until Count O'Reilly, a Spanish officer, arrived in New Orleans, with a large military force, in August, 1769, when he issued his proclamation abolishing the French laws, and substituted the Spanish code.

The conveyance of the Louisiana Territory, created great dissatisfaction amongst the French inhabitants, who still claimed allegiance to France. Count O'Reilly, during his administration, in a tyrannical manner arrested a number of influential French citizens, executed a few, imprisoned two in Havana, Cuba, and maltreated others. The substitution of the Spanish laws was confirmed by the Spanish government on March 24, 1770.

The Territory of Louisiana was retroceded by Spain to France in the year 1800, and France, by the treaty of 1803, ceded it to the United States, who took possession March 10, 1804.

The acts of the United States Congress of March 26, 1804, of 1805, and of June 1812, did not abrogate the Spanish laws. The act of January 19, 1816, of the Legislature of Missouri Territory, attempting to introduce the common laws of England, provided they were not repugnant to the United States laws and statutes of the then Territory of Missouri, by decisions of courts did not repeal former laws. It was the act of Feb-

ruary, 1825, of the Legislature of the State of Missouri, which established the common law, which abolished the Spanish code. The Spanish laws were in force in Upper Louisiana (now Missouri) from 1769 until 1825, excepted as modified by the Territorial Legislature of Missouri.

The original grants of land in Upper Louisiana depended upon the grants made by Spanish officers and Spanish laws, hence the importance of the original land titles. The public records show that no lands in Upper Louisiana were attempted to be granted until April 27, 1766 to 1770 by St Ange de Belle Rive. The grants made by St. Ange, without authority, were afterwards examined, surveyed and granted by Spanish officers on the 23d of May, 1772, during the administration of Lieutenant-Governor Don Pedro Piernas, the then Spanish Governor of Upper Louisiana.

## PART IV.

### NAVIGATION IN THE WEST.

THE NAVAL ARMAMENT OF THE SPANIARDS ON  
THE MISSISSIPPI IN EARLY TIMES.—THE  
WESTERN BOATMAN. - - INTRODUCTION OF  
STEAM POWER.

THE Mississippi river, known as the "Father of Waters," takes its source from the great North-West, traversing an immense forest and country, and rolling its vast waters to the Gulf of Mexico. At times it is filled with sand bars, snags, sawyers, and drift wood. It is studded with numerous and beautiful Islands. Its banks were originally inhabited by several tribes of Indians and by wild animals and fowls of every species. Its bosom then, was only ruffled by the Indian bark canoe.

The first discovery of this magnificent river, was by Ferdinand De Soto and his Spanish cavaliers, fifty years after the discovery of America by Columbus, in search of gold and precious metals, which was conducted in a spirit of brutality, avarice and religious zeal. It was in the year



1673, that Father Marquette, accompanied by Joliet, and decked with a beautiful calumet, adorned with rich plumage, a gift from the Indian warriors of Illinois—being the emblem of peace, descended this monarch river, from the Wisconsin river to the Arkansas.

Shortly after this, the immortal La Salle and armament, in the year 1682, descended the Mississippi to the Gulf of Mexico, for commercial purposes, and to erect the lilies of France over its banks.

During the dominion of France and Spain over the Mississippi river in early times, there existed along the banks of this river, a great number of pirates, desperadoes and savages, who committed many depredations upon the commerce of the country, whilst robberies, murders, and terrible crimes, were committed upon flat and keel-boats, which navigated from St. Louis and the Ohio river to New Orleans. They were the terror of boat-men, who had to pay tribute to them, often at the sacrifice of life and the loss of their cargoes. The principal places of attack and refuge for these pirates and desperadoes, were at the "Rivière des Liards" (Cottonwood creek), also Grand Tower, half way between St. Louis and the Ohio river. These two places were the nucleus for the bands of marauders.

Whilst France waved her flag over Fort Chartres, in early times, a large keel-boat from New Orleans, loaded with goods, provisions and am-

munition, was captured at Grand Tower, by pirates and savages. The cargo was seized, and crew murdered with the exception of a young woman from New Orleans, who was going to join her sister at the fort, but by some remarkable fortune escaped at the time in the woods. She wandered up the bank of the river, suffering for want of food, severity of the weather, and the terror of being discovered, until she reached the high bluffs of Illinois, and beheld the flag over Fort Chartres to her great joy.

This occurrence gave her new courage, and she proceeded on her way with torn clothes and lacerated feet, until she fortunately reached Fort Chartres, and related the terrible fate of the boat.

#### AT BEAUSOLEIL ISLAND.

We give another incident of these piracies, from the "Great West": In the year 1787, a barge richly laden, left New Orleans, bound for St. Louis. At Beausoleil Island the robbers boarded the vessel, and ordered the crew below, with the owner, Mr. Beausoleil, among them. His whole fortune was in this barge, and now as he was to be deprived of it, he was in agony. But all was saved to him through the heroic daring of a negro, one of the crew.

The negro Cacasotte was short and slender, but strong and active. As soon as the robbers

had taken possession, Cacasotte appeared overjoyed. He danced, sang, laughed, and soon induced them to believe that his ebullition of pleasure arose from their having liberated him from slavery. His constant attention to their smallest wants won their confidence, and he alone was permitted to roam unmolested through the vessel.

Having so far effected his object, he seized the first opportunity to speak to Mr. Beausoleil and beg permission to rid him of his dangerous intruders.

He laid his plan before his master, who, with a good deal of hesitation, acceded to it. Cacasotte was cook, and it was agreed between him and his conspirators, likewise two negroes, that the signal for dinner should be the signal for action. When the hour arrived, the robbers assembled in considerable numbers on the deck, and stationed themselves on the bow and stern, and along the sides, to prevent any rising of the men. Cacasotte went among them with the utmost unconcerned look and demeanor imaginable. As soon as his comrades had taken their station, he placed himself in the bow near one of the robbers, a stout, herculean fellow, who was armed cap-a-pie.

Cacasotte gave the preconcerted signal, and immediately the robber near him was struggling in the water. With the speed of lightning he ran from one robber to another, as they were sitting

on the sides of the boat, and in a few seconds time had thrown several of them overboard. Then seizing an oar, he struck on the head those who had attempted to save themselves by grappling the running board; then shot with rifles that had been dropped on deck, those who swam away. In the meantime his comrades had done almost as much as their leader. The deck was soon cleared and the robbers who remained below were too few to offer any resistance.

But as these did not comprise all the band, they continued their depredations until the next year, when they were broken up and all kinds of merchandise, the fruits of their depredations, were found on the Island.

#### L'ANNEE DES BATEAUX.—1788.

The many depredations on the Mississippi river induced the Spanish Governor of Louisiana to order that all the boats going up the river in the year 1788, should leave New Orleans together, which formed that year an armed convoy of ten boats, for the purpose of destroying the pirates on the river. This armament was very successful and resulted in the dispersion of these marauders, the seizure of their stolen fire-arms, goods and ammunition, and the breaking up of their encampments. That year became known as "L'année des Dix Bateaux."

### SPANISH NAVAL ARMAMENT.

A naval armament was ordered by Spain in the year 1797, on the Mississippi river, of several galleys of forty oars, commanded by Don Carlos Howard, for the protection of Spanish commerce and dominion over the Mississippi. This naval expedition consisted of one hundred oarsmen and seamen, who organized in New Orleans and navigated up the river, until they reached St. Louis in safety. That year was known as, "L'année des Galères."

### THE WESTERN BOATMEN.

Previous to the introduction of steam-power on the Western waters, there existed a large number of Western boatmen, who were a class of men of great bravery, hardy, fearless, and of a desperate character. They were accustomed to every kind of dangers, privations and exposures; with their skiffs, canoes, pirogues, barges and keel-boats they navigated the Western waters, to great distances, amidst a vast wilderness in the transportation of groceries, furs, and goods of all kinds.

The boatmen were roughly dressed, naked to the waist, sunburnt, developed herculean strength, propelled their boats up and down the rivers, with their strong arms; often used the cordel, and

common sails, when the weather was favorable. After a day's of hard work, they took their ration of whiskey, and, with a good appetite, ate their supper, consisting of pork and hominy. They then stretched themselves with their blankets on the boat for rest, while lulled to sleep by the music of the fiddle and the gushing of the waters. The steersman's horn called them in the early morning to the "fillée" and breakfast, then to their hard toil as oarsmen for the day.

The keel-boat men were fond of fist-fighting as a pastime; and looked upon raftsmen and flat-boatmen, as their enemies, which often brought a collision between them. Their arrival in port was the cause of general frolic amongst them, when they indulged in all kinds of dissipation.

#### MIKE FINK, THE NOTORIOUS BOATMAN.

This notorious boatman of the West, was born at Pittsburgh. In early youth his ruling passion was to become a boatman. He soon gratified his ambition and became notorious in this occupation. He was nearly six feet in height; his skin was tanned by his great exposure to the weather; he possessed an herculean strength. "His language was the half-horse and half-alligator dialect of that race of boatmen." He was well acquainted with the navigation of the Western rivers and knew his business thoroughly.

Fink had always around him boon companions, and his many dangerous fights gave him notoriety and character, and are too numerous to relate. He was a splendid shot ; never missed the object he fired upon. His partner and particular friend Carpenter, was also a good shot. " Mike and Carpenter used to fill a tin-cup with whiskey, and placing it in turn on each other's head, shot at it with a rifle, at the distance of seventy yards ; it was always bored through without injury, until they had a quarrel together, about a squaw, when Fink shot Carpenter. Fink was a reckless and passionate man, and kept a mistress in every port, which often brought him into trouble. His career was that of a desperado.

Whilst in St. Louis, in about the year 1815, being on his boat at St. Louis landing, he saw a negro standing on the river bank. Fink took up his rifle and shot off the poor fellow's heel. He fell, badly wounded and crying murder. Fink was arrested, and found guilty by a jury. His justification was that the fellow's heel projected too far behind, preventing him wearing a genteel boot, and he wished to correct the defect."

Captain E. W. Gould states that Mike Fink began his career as a spy and scout against the Indians along the Ohio during the war of 1812. Subsequently he became in succession a boatman, a whiskey guzzler, a desperado and a trapper, in all of which vocations he attained the first rank. The most marvelous tales are told of

Mike's achievements in each of these branches of endeavor, and what is known of him from the testimony of veracious eye-witnesses to his deeds makes the wildest and most surprising of the stories plausible. He was the best rifle shot in the Mississippi Valley, could, and often did, drink a gallon of whiskey in twenty-four hours without its making any perceptible change in his demeanor or language, and, according to his own statement, could "outrun, outtop, outjump, throw down, drag out and lick any man in the country." To which recapitulation of qualifications he used sometimes to add: "I am a Salt River roarer; I love the wimmen and am chuck full of fight." Those who knew him said that physically he was a model for a Hercules.

When during the "20's" by the introduction of the steamboat, Mike found his occupation as a flatboatman gone, he joined a party of Missouri trappers and went to the mouth of the Yellowstone, and at that place his career closes. One day, while attempting to shoot at seventy yards distance a tin cup from a comrade's head, a feat which he had accomplished often before, both in his sober and drunken moments, he killed the companion. It was suspected that this was not an accident, and a few weeks later, while under the influence of whiskey, Mike confessed that he had done the deed intentionally, whereupon one of the dead man's friends killed him. With the



“removal” of Mike Fink disappeared the last and most notable of the flatboatmen.

STEAM POWER INTRODUCED ON WESTERN RIVERS  
IN 1811.

The first steamer constructed, and propelled by steam on Western rivers, was the “New Orleans,” at Pittsburgh in the year 1811. The plan of this steamer was made by Robert Fulton. She was one hundred and sixteen feet long, by twenty feet beam, propelled by steam; she was constructed by Nicolas Roosevelt and some New York mechanics. She was launched and ready for navigation in the year 1811, the year of the Great Comet, which appeared in the heavens, foretelling great events.

The “New Orleans” made her first trip from Pittsburgh to Louisville on the Ohio river. The crew consisted of a captain, an engineer, a pilot, six hands, two women-servants, a cook and a man-waiter. As she floated down the river, she drew much attention from the people, who stood on the banks to watch this first steamboat, and hoping its success. The only passengers on board, at the time, were Mr. Roosevelt and wife. The great success of this enterprise, and the arrival of the steamer at Louisville, was commemorated by a sumptuous dinner given to the crew by the citizens of Louisville.

The "New Orleans," not being then able to pass the Falls, returned to Pittsburgh; and soon again descended the Ohio, passed the Falls, then proceeded to New Orleans, where she arrived in safety, which became a triumph in steam navigation on the Western waters.

#### STEAMBOATS.— 1817.

IT was on the memorable day of June 17, 1817, that the first steamer named "Pike," commanded by Jacob Reed, steamed up the Mississippi above the mouth of the Ohio river, and entered the port of St. Louis, which event seemed miraculous to its inhabitants and the sons of the forest. It was but a few years afterwards, that numerous and splendid steamers could be seen with flying colors navigating the great waters of the West. Suffice it to state, that what formerly took many months' navigation — from New Orleans to St. Louis, is now accomplished within five or six days, showing at this period the wonderful improvement in steam navigation.

#### MISSOURI RIVER NAVIGATION.

IN 1819, the steamboat "Independence," Captain Nelson, from Louisville, Kentucky, navigated the Missouri river, as far as Old Chariton, above Glasgow, returned to Franklin, taking

freight for Louisville. The first steamboat, up the Upper Mississippi, was the "General Putnam," Moses D. Bates, Captain. It navigated to Galena, Illinois, during the summer of 1825.

NAVIGATION OF WESTERN RIVERS BY STEAM-  
POWER IN 1874.

The commerce on Western rivers increased greatly by the introduction of steam power, for in the year 1874, the amount of tonnage afloat on the Western rivers, embraced 2,085 vessels of 400,718 tons; of these, 1017 were steamers registering 272,704 tons, and 633 barges registering 129,018 tons.

The products of the Mississippi basin transported by river in 1874 were as follows:

Indian Corn, bushels	-	-	626,369,442
Wheat	-	-	214,395,341
Oats	-	-	176,367,379
Barley	-	-	12,643,714
Rye	-	-	6,508,717
Total	-	-	1,035,194,584
Cotton (Bales)	-	-	3,011,993
Tobacco, Pounds	-	-	228,713,884
Average loss annually then of vessels and property on the rivers	-	-	\$3,225,444
Average loss of lives (annually)	-	-	431

Showing the immense increase of commerce on Western rivers during a half century.

## PART V.

### AMERICAN CONQUESTS.

THE CAPTURE OF KASKASKIA, OF CAHOKIA AND  
VINCENNES BY COL. ROGERS CLARK, AND HIS  
DEFENSE OF ST. LOUIS IN 1778-1780.

DURING the most trying times of the American Revolution, and whilst Patrick Henry, the great orator and statesman, was fortunately then the Governor of the commonwealth of Virginia, Colonel Rogers Clark seeing the great advantages to accrue to Virginia, offered to its authorities his services in raising troops to take possession of Illinois, which was then a vast country, north of the Ohio river, occupied and claimed by the British under the treaty of 1763

Governor Henry, without the concurrence of the Colonial Congress, but with the advice of Thomas Jefferson, George Mason, and George Whyte, concluded in the name of Virginia to empower Colonel Clark to raise troops to invade Illinois, and more specially to capture Kaskaskia and establish a fort near the mouth of the Ohio. Governor Patrick Henry on the 2d January 1778,

gave private instructions to Col. George Rogers Clark.

Colonel Clark immediately commenced organizing his Virginia riflemen, and proceeded to Fort Pitt for ammunition ; from thence descended the Ohio river, and formed a camp, known as "Corn Island," opposite the present city of Louisville, Ky. After organizing his troops there, he left his camp June 24, 1778, for the Illinois country. He descended the Ohio river in keel-boats, as far as the mouth of the Tennessee river, when he met a party of hunters, amongst them John Duff, who was direct from Kaskaskia, and gave him important information. John Saunders was employed as a guide to conduct Colonel Clark to Kaskaskia. From the Tennessee river they proceeded further down the Ohio to "Fort Massacre," being forty miles above its mouth.

Governor Reynolds of Illinois says:—

"The reason of this fort acquiring its name, is a little singular. The Indians of the south side of the Ohio, opposite this fort, covered themselves with bear skins, and imitated the bear with their movements, on a sandy beach of the river. The French soldiers in the garrison, supposed them true and genuine bears, crossed the river to have a bear hunt, but sorely did they suffer for it; the Indians threw off their bear skins, and massacred the soldiers."

This Fort Massacre, now called Fort Massac,

was built in the year 1758, but in the year 1711 was a missionary station.

From here Clark, through the wilderness and prairies took a direct course as possible to Kaskaskia, and by his activity and boldness captured Fort Gage and Kaskaskia July 4th, 1778, without the loss of a man. The post of Kaskaskia was at the time under the command of M. Rocheblave, a French officer, who acted under English authority. He was made a prisoner, and sent to Virginia. When Kaskaskia was captured, its inhabitants were much alarmed and seized with great fear on account of the presence of the troops of Virginia. Men, women, and children were heard lamenting and screaming, "Les longs Couteaux!"

Colonel Clark soon brought order out of confusion, and told the inhabitants that he and his soldiers came amongst them as friends and not as enemies. When assured of this, and informed that France had made an alliance with the Americans, these compeers of Lafayette immediately accepted allegiance to Virginia. They all assembled at the old Catholic church. The *Te Deum* was loudly chanted and the old bells rang their joyful peal.

Kaskaskia was then populated by Frenchmen and Canadians, with a population of over one thousand, and contained about two hundred and fifty dwellings.

Colonel Clark immediately despatched Captain Bowen, with a company, accompanied by some of the French soldiers from Kaskaskia, who took possession of Cahokia without trouble or bloodshed.

Captain Helm, with a small force, accompanied by Father Gibault, the Catholic pastor of Kaskaskia, was sent to take possession of Vincennes, which was done, with the inhabitants, who also took allegiance to Virginia.

Governor Hamilton of Detroit, the British officer in command, hearing of the capture of the place by Captain Helm, determined to retake it, which he did, December 15, 1777. Colonel Clark, being informed of this, was determined to retake the position. He immediately ordered and armed a Mississippi naval boat at Kaskaskia, commanded by Captain Rogers, with forty-six men, mounted with two four-pounders and six swivels, being the first naval armament in the West. They were to descend the Kaskaskia and Mississippi, and to proceed up the Ohio and Wabash rivers, to be in position to serve at Vincennes. Colonel Clark, with his troops and the assistance of soldiers from Kaskaskia and from Cahokia. One company, organized from Cahokia, was commanded by the brave Chevalier Mc Carty, and the one from Kaskaskia was commanded by Captain Francis Charleville. Captain Charleville, was the son of Joseph Chauvin, marquis de Charleville. The Charleville family bore

an honorable name. Captain Francis Charleville left twin sons, Jean Baptiste and Charles, who settled in St. Genevieve district. These two sons served in the war of 1812 under General Dodge. The other son, named Joseph, emigrated to St. Louis, and left numerous descendants in that city.

Colonel Clark, proceeding by land, by forced marches and much suffering, appeared before Fort Sackville and Vincennes, attacked the British and Indians, and captured both places on the 24th day of February, 1779. Governor Hamilton and troops were made prisoners and he was sent under strong guard to Virginia.

The house of burgesses of Virginia in October, 1778, made John Todd lieutenant-colonel civil commander of Kaskaskia and of Illinois country. During these campaigns, Cahokia was under charge of Captain Bowman, Kaskaskia under Captain Williams, and Vincennes under Captain Helm.

Colonel Clark, in the summer of 1779 embarked in his gally, commanded by Captain Rogers, by the way of the Wabash, Ohio and Mississippi returning to Kaskaskia from Vincennes. While at Kaskaskia in the latter part of 1779, he was advised through his scouts that British soldiers and Indians from the lakes, contemplated an attack upon St. Louis. He offered his services to the authorities of that post. But Governor Leyba, then commander of the post, declined to



accept the same, the post of St. Louis at the time being in Upper Louisiana and under the Spanish flag.

When the inhabitants of St. Louis saw the danger that threatened them, they sent word to Colonel Clark, at Kaskaskia, to come to their rescue. Colonel Clark in the mean time had kept a rigid watch upon the movements of the British and Indians in Illinois. When he heard of the approach of the enemy in their intended attack upon the post of St. Louis, he marched his troops to Cahokia, and also opposite to St. Louis.

This movement of his, produced terror amongst the British and Indians, and caused this hostile force to abandon their project. Shortly after this, Colonel Clark sent a detachment of one hundred and fifty men to Prairie Des Chiens, and across the Rock and Illinois rivers and down to Kaskaskia, commanded by Captain John Montgomery. The Indians were struck with terror, saying, if so few dare to follow them "They would fight like devils."

There can be no doubt in this matter, after the statements of such historians as Benton, Monette, Judge Martin, Drake and others, and especially of Amos Stoddard, a captain of artillery in the service of the United States, who took possession of Upper Louisiana in March, 1804, in the name of the United States. Is it probable that Colonel Clark, knowing of this contemplated attack, would permit British troops and Indians,

with whom he was at war, to cross the Illinois country to take an important post but one half a day's march, from Cahokia and Kaskaskia, and to snatch from him his laurels and conquest? Hence Colonel Clark was prepared for this invasion : with his usual foresight and talent moving his forces from Kaskaskia and Cahokia, to opposite the post of St. Louis, and was ready to act with promptness in case of necessity, which he did, and caused a panic amongst the British and warriors, which prevented the post of St. Louis from being sacked and made a British post. It is well known that Governor Leyba was shortly afterwards removed from office. What, with this treachery and with the enemy's strength, prevented St. Louis from being captured, if it had not been for the noble and chivalrous Clark?

Such is the correct history of what is known as "L'année du Coup."

In accordance with Governor Patrick Henry's instructions of January 2, 1778, Colonel Clark, during the spring of 1780, established Fort Jefferson, below the mouth of the Ohio, in the country of the Chickasaw Indians. It was soon after the attack on St. Louis, that Colonel Clark, with a force descended the Kaskaskia and Mississippi rivers, with his naval armament, carrying cannon and ammunition from Fort Gage and Kaskaskia, to Fort Jefferson, being not over three days' navigation.

Colonel Clark left Fort Jefferson in the month

of June, 1780, when he had scarcely finished his labors at this fort, owing to Colonel Byrd's invasion of the Licking in Kentucky. Colonel Byrd had then captured two northern stations in that state. Colonel Clark immediately resolved to go to Harrodsburg. For this purpose he disguised himself, with two companions, as savages, and amid great dangers soon reached there. Thence he proceeded to Louisville and arrived there July 14, 1780, where in August, 1780, he took command of a regiment of mounted volunteers, to invade the Great Miami. In the same year Colonel Clark took command of the Kentucky militia, with the title of brigadier-general. In April, 1781, Clark returned to Fort Jefferson to defend it against the Chickasaw warriors headed by Colbert, a half-bred chief. Shortly afterward the fort was dismantled by order of Virginia, when the Chickasaw Indians ceased their hostilities.

Colonel Clark occupied the Illinois country from the taking of Kaskaskia, July 4th, 1778, to June, 1780, and had in less than two years conquered it, having possession of Cahokia, Kaskaskia, Vincennes and Fort Jefferson, in the meantime making valuable treaties with the different tribes of Indians. These military achievements in so short a time required all his personal attention, and his exploits certainly, under the many difficulties are wonderful and extraordinary. Colonel Clark's bravery, activity and genius, saved

St. Louis and Illinois and prevented them from falling under the English rules. General George Rogers Clark deserves for this great and magnificent domain acquired to the United States the gratitude of its citizens, and more especially of this great Valley.

It is not my purpose at this time to follow further his military career ; sufficient to say that after the services he had rendered he was destined like great benefactors to become poor and destitute, until Virginia presented him with a sword and \$400 annual allowance.

General Clark died at Locust Grove, near Louisville, at the residence of his brother-in-law, Major Croghan.

## HISTORY OF FORT JEFFERSON.

ESTABLISHED IN 1780.

IN accordance with Governor P. Henry's instructions, January 28, 1778 and the subsequent orders of Governor Thomas Jefferson, of Virginia, during the spring of 1780, Colonel George Rogers Clark established Fort Jefferson. This fort was built four miles below the Ohio river, on the Mississippi, above Mayfield creek, which is opposite Island No. 1, in the then country of the Chickasaw and Cherokee Indians. It was soon after the attack on St. Louis May, 26, 1780, that Col. Clark, June 4, 1780, with a force descended the Kaskaskia and Mississippi rivers, with his naval armament, carrying cannons and ammunitions from Forts Gage and Kaskaskia to erect Fort Jefferson, being not over three days' navigation from Kaskaskia.

Fort Jefferson was attacked in the summer of 1781, by the Chickasaws and other Indian warriors, headed by Colbert, a Scotchman. After a few days' siege it was relieved by Colonel Rogers Clark, which forced these savages to retreat. This fort was shortly afterwards abandoned by orders of Virginia.

We give the graphic description of this fort by Governor Reynolds, of Illinois :

In 1780, the Government of Virginia, the great statesman Thomas Jefferson, being Governor, knew that the Spanish Crown pretended to have some claim on the country east of the Mississippi, below the mouth of the Ohio ; and to counteract this claim, ordered George Rogers Clark to erect a fort on the east side of the Mississippi, on the first eligible point below the mouth of the Ohio.

General Clark, with his accustomed foresight and extraordinary energy, levied a considerable number of citizen soldiers, and proceeded from Kaskaskia to the high land, known at this day as Mayfield's creek, five miles below the mouth of the Ohio. Here, on the east side of the Mississippi, he erected a fort, and called it Jefferson, in honor of the then Governor of Virginia. It was neglected to obtain the consent of the Indians for the erection of the fort, as the Governor of Virginia had requested. This neglect proved to be a great calamity. Clark encouraged immigration to the fort, and promised the settlers lands. Captain Piggot and many others followed his standard.

The fort being established, General Clark was called away to the frontiers of Kentucky, and left the fort for its protection in the hands of Captain Piggot, and the soldiers and citizens under him.

Captain Piggot was a native of Connecticut, and engaged in the privateering service in the

Revolutionary war. He was in danger of assassination by the enemy in his native State, and emigrated to Westmoreland county, Pennsylvania. He was appointed captain of a company in the Revolution by the Legislature of his adopted State, and served under Generals St. Clair and Washington. He was in the battles of Brandywine, Saratoga, and marched to Canada. By severe marches and hard service, his health was impaired so that he was forced to resign his captaincy, and with his family, he left his residence in Westmoreland county and came west with General Clark.

Several families settled in the vicinity of Fort Jefferson, and some in it; but all attempted to cultivate the soil to some extent for a living.

The Chickasaw and Choctaw Indians became angry for the encroachments of the whites, and in August, 1781, commenced an attack on the settlements around the fort. The whole number of warriors must have been ten or twelve hundred, headed by the celebrated Scotchman Colbert, whose posterity figured as half-breeds. These tribes commenced hostilities on the settlements around the fort. The Indians came first in small parties, which saved many of the inhabitants. If they had reached the settlement in a body, the whole white population outside of the fort would have been destroyed.

As soon as the preparation for the attack of the Indians on the fort was certainly known, a

trusty messenger was dispatched to the Falls of the Ohio, as it was called at that day and for years afterwards, for more provisions and ammunition. If support did not arrive in time, the small settlements and garrison would be destroyed, and it was extremely uncertain if succor would reach the fort in time.

The settlement and fort were in the greatest distress ; almost starving, no ammunition, and such great distance from the settlements at Kaskaskia and the Falls.

The first parties of Indians killed many of the inhabitants before they could be moved to the fort, and there were great danger and distress in marching them into it. Also the sickness prevailed to such an extent, that more than half were down sick at the time. The famine was so distressing, that it was said they had to eat the pumpkins as soon as the blossoms fell off the vines. This Indian marauding and murdering private persons, and families, lasted almost two weeks before the main army of Indian warriors reached the fort. The soldiers aided and received in the fort all the white population that could be moved.

The whole family of Mr. Music, except himself, was killed and inhumanely butchered by the enemy. Many other persons were also killed.

In the skirmishes a white man was taken prisoner, who was compelled, to save his life, to report *the true state of the garrison*. This inform-



ation added fury to the already heated passions of the savages.

After the arrival of the warriors, with Colbert at their head, they besieged the fort for six days and nights. During this time no one can describe the misery and distress the garrison was doomed to suffer. The water had almost given out. The river was falling fast, and the water in the wells sank with the river. Scarcely any provisions remained, and the sickness raged so in the fort, that many could not be stirred from the beds. The wife of Captain Piggot, and some others, died in the fort, and were buried inside of the walls, while the Indians besieged the outside. If no relief came, the garrison would inevitably fall into the hands of the Indians and be murdered.

It was agreed by the Indians with the white prisoner, that if he told the truth, they would spare his life. He told them truly, that more than half in the fort were sick—that each man had not more than three rounds of ammunition, and that scarcely any provisions were in the garrison. On receiving this information, the whole Indian army retired about two miles, to hold a council. They sent back Colbert and three chiefs with a flag of truce to the fort.

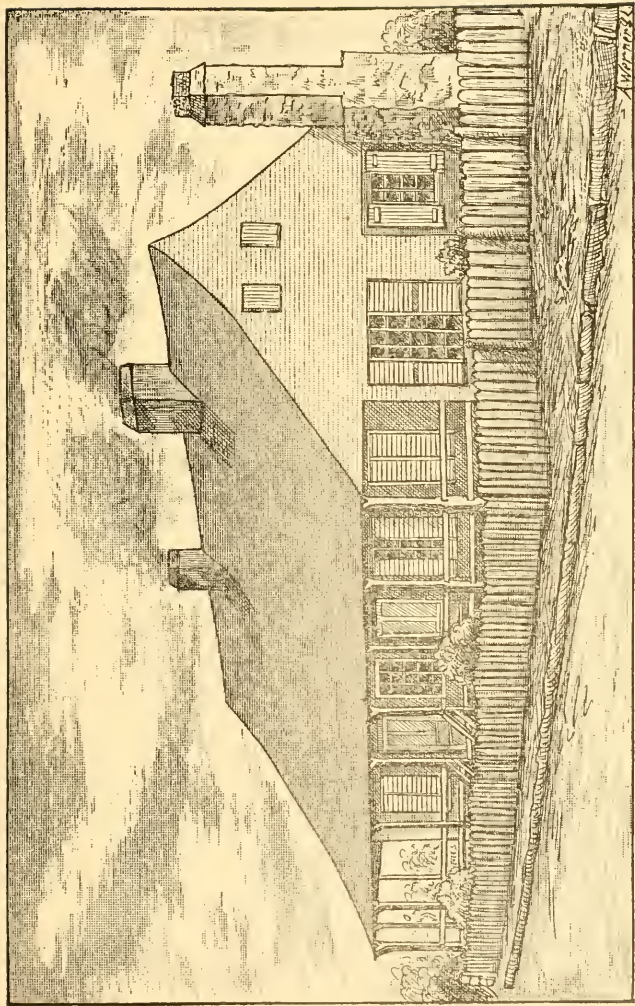
When the whites discovered the white flag, they sent out Captain Piggot, M. Owens, and one other man, to meet the Indian delegation. This was done for fear the enemy would know the desperate condition of the fort. The parley

was conducted under the range of the guns of the garrison.

Colbert informed them that they were sent to demand a surrender of the fort at discretion ; that they knew the defenseless condition of the fort, and to surrender it might save much bloodshed. He further said : that they had sent a great force of warriors up the river to intercept the succor for which the whites had sent a messenger. This the prisoner had told them. Colbert promised he would do his best to save the lives of the prisoners, all if they would surrender, except a few, whom the Indians had determined to kill. He said, the Indians are pressing for the spoils, and would not wait long. He gave the garrison one hour for a decision.

On receiving this information, the garrison had an awful and gloomy scene presented to them. One person exclaimed : “ Great God direct us what to do in this terrible crisis ! ”

After mature deliberation, Piggot, and the other delegates were instructed to say, that nothing would be said, as to the information received from the prisoner. If we deny his statements, you may kill him—we cannot confide in your promises to protect us ; but we will promise, if the Indians will leave the country, the garrison will abandon the fort and the country as soon as possible. Colbert agreed to submit this proposition in council to the warriors. But on retiring, Mr. Music, whose family was murdered, and an-



HEADQUARTERS OF COMMANDANT VALLÉ AT ST. GENEVIEVE.



other man, shot at Colbert, and a ball wounded him. This outrage was greatly condemned by the garrison, and the two transgressors were taken into custody. The wound of Colbert was dressed, and he guarded safely to the Indians.

The warriors remained long in council, and by a kind providential act, the long wished for succor did arrive in safety from the " Falls."

The Indians had struck the river too high up, thereby the boat with the supplies escaped. The provisions and men were hurried into the fort, and preparations were made to resist a night attack by the warriors.

Every preparation that could be made for the defense of the fort was accomplished. The sick and small children were placed out of the way of the combatants, and all the women and children of any size were instructed in the art of defense. The warriors, shortly after dark, thought they could steal on the fort and capture it; but when they were frustrated, they with hideous yells and loud, savage demonstrations, assaulted the garrison, and attempted to storm it. The cannon had been placed in proper position to rake the walls, and when the warriors mounted the ramparts, the cannon swept them off in heaps. The enemy kept up a stream of fire from their rifles on the garrison, which did not much execution. In this manner the battle raged for hours; but at last the enemy were forced to recoil, and withdrew from the deadly cannon of the fort. Colbert and

other chiefs again urged the warriors to the charge ; but the same result to retire was forced on them again. Men and women on that day were soldiers by instinct. It seemed they could not be otherwise.

The greatest danger was for fear the fort would be set on fire. A large dauntless Indian, painted for the occasion, by some means got on the top of one of the block houses, and was applying fire to the roof. A white soldier, of equal courage, went out of the block house and shot the Indian, as he was blowing the fire to the building. The Indian fell dead on the outside of the fort and was packed off by his comrades.

After a large and arduous battle, the Indians withdrew from the fort. They were satisfied ; they had attacked the garrison, and they could not storm it. They packed off all the dead and wounded. Many were killed and wounded of the Indians, as much blood was discovered in the morning around the fort. Several of the whites were also wounded, but not mortally. This was one of the most desperate assaults made by the Indians in the West, on a garrison so weak and distressed and defenseless.

The whites were rejoiced at their success, and made preparations to abandon the premises with all convenient speed.

The citizen soldiers at Fort Jefferson, all abandoned the fort ; and some wended their way to

Kaskaskia, and others to the Falls. Captain Piggot, with many of his brave companions, arrived at Kaskaskia, and remained there some years.

This flood of brave and energetic emigrants, so early as the year 1781, was the first considerable acquisition of American population Illinois received. Many of the most worthy and respectable families of Illinois can trace back their lineage to this illustrious and noble ancestry, and can say, with pride and honor, that their forefathers fought in the Revolution to conquer the Valley of the Mississippi.

About the year 1783, Captain Piggot established a fort not far from the bluff in the American Bottom, west of the present town of Columbia, in Monroe county, which was called Piggot's Fort, or the Fort of the "Grand Ruisseau." This was the largest fortification erected by the Americans in Illinois, and at that day was well defended with cannon and small arms. In 1790, Captain Piggot and forty-five other inhabitants at this fort, sometimes called Big Run in English, signed a petition to Governor St. Clair, praying for grants of land to the settlers. It is stated in that petition, that there were seventeen families in the Fort.

I presume it was on this petition that the Act of Congress was passed granting to every settler on the public land in Illinois four hundred acres and a militia donation of one hundred acres to each man enrolled in the militia service of that year.

Governor St. Clair knew the character of Captain Piggot in the army of the Revolution, and appointed him the presiding Judge of the Court of St. Clair county.

Captain Piggot, in the year 1795, established the first ferry across the Mississippi, opposite St. Louis, Mo., known now as Wiggin's ferry; and Governor Trudeau, of Louisiana, gave him license for a ferry and to land on the west bank of the river in St. Louis, with the privilege to collect the ferriage. He died at the ferry, opposite St. Louis, in the year 1799, after having spent an active and eventful life in the Revolution, and in the conquest and early settlement of the West.



## PART VI.

### I. — THE ST. GENEVIEVE DISTRICT. HISTORY OF ST. GENEVIEVE.

---

#### LE VIEUX VILLAGE.

PREVIOUS to the settlement of *Le vieux village de Ste-Genevieve*, Francis Renault, of France, Agent of the "Company of the West," established himself near Fort Chartres, Illinois, with his two hundred miners and five hundred slaves in the year 1720. Immediately he crossed the Mississippi river, and overrun the district of St. Genevieve, with his miners, and slaves, and commenced mining for precious metals, succeeding only in discovering lead mines, and to this day can be seen the marks and diggings, over this whole district, of his exploring and mining operations.

Renault's only success was the smelting of lad, which was conveyed to Fort Chartres on pack horses until 1735.

## ST. GENEVIEVE DISTRICT.

This original district under the French and Spaniards, was bounded north by the Merrimac river; south by the Rivière à la Pomme (Apple creek); east by the Mississippi and fronting same one hundred miles; west, never designated. The same district was again re-established by Governor William Harrison, when Governor of Indiana Territory, by proclamation of October 1st, 1804. This district possesses agricultural resources and mineral wealth unsurpassed in any country in the world. The first mining operation in Upper Louisiana, was by Sieur de Lochan, on the Merrimac river, below St. Louis; the said mine, was worked under the care of a Spaniard, named Antonio, and by La Renaudière under Renault. Francis Renault, the agent of the "Company of the West," left France in 1719, under the auspices of that company with two hundred miners provided with mining tools. On his passage to New Orleans he touched at St. Domingo, where he purchased five hundred slaves. He then proceeded to Kaskaskia and Fort Chartres for the purpose of mining in Illinois and Missouri.

In 1720, near Fort Chartres, Renault built the village of St. Philip. He then crossed the Mississippi, and discovered the lead mines of Potosi, now Washington county, which yet bear the

name of Renault Mines. He afterwards returned to France in 1742. During this period in 1720 Mine Lamotte was discovered by Lamotte, one of the agents of Renault: these mines are situated on the St. Francis river, now Madison county, in the State of Missouri. Another large lead field, called "Mine à Breton," near Potosi, was discovered by Asa Breton in the year 1763. Breton was a native of France, and born in the year 1710, and served in the armies of France. He emigrated to this country in early times. In the year 1755 he took part in the defeat of Braddock's troops, at Fort Duquesne, now Pittsburgh. Breton came to Upper Louisiana, now Missouri, and became a hunter and miner. Whilst hunting he discovered the "Breton Mines." When advanced to a great age, he lived with the Micheau family, at Little Rock Ferry, two miles above the then town of St. Genevieve. Breton was a man of robust constitution, and of great activity. In his old age, he would walk to the church regularly every Sabbath day to St. Genevieve. He died March 1st 1821, and was buried in the Catholic cemetery, at St. Genevieve, by Reverend Father Henry Pratte, parish priest. He lived to the extraordinary age of one hundred and eleven years.

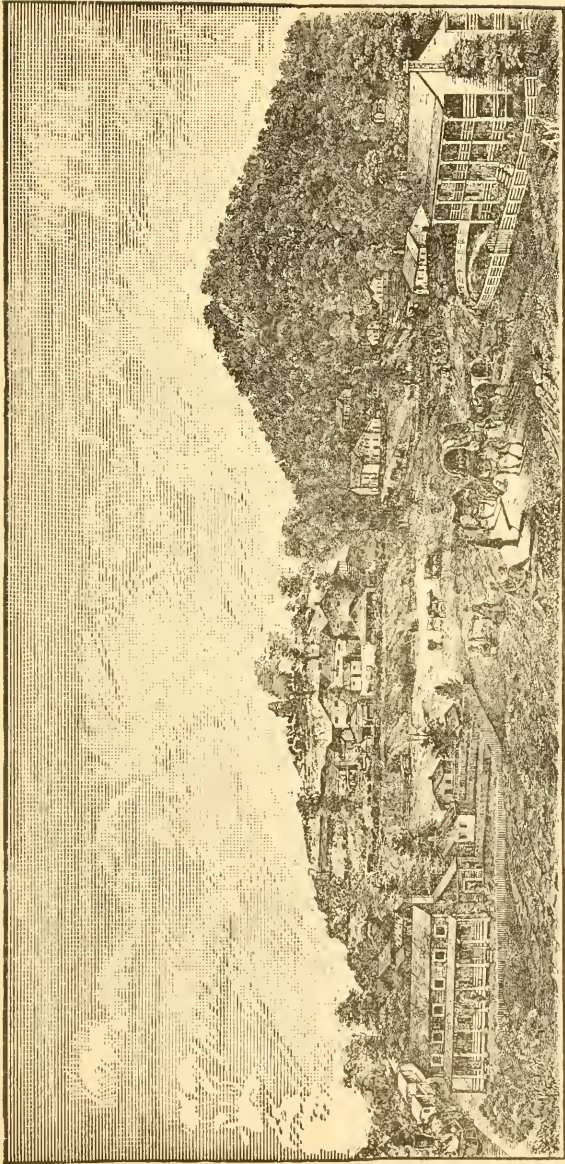
Moses Austin, an American from Virginia, but a native of Connecticut, he was fortunate in 1797 in obtaining a grant of land from the Spanish government, which tract embraced part of the

“Breton Mines,” containing one league, upon which he sunk several shafts, and erected the first reverberatory furnace for the smelting of lead, at Potosi, Missouri. Austin made to the United States Government a valuable report of the Missouri lead mines, February 13, 1804, showing the immense lead fields in Upper Louisiana.

We are further indebted to Professor Schoolcraft for his report on these mines in the year 1819; also to the Geological survey of the State of Missouri, conducted by scientific men. The lead from these mines was first taken to Fort Chartres on pack horses; afterwards to St. Genevieve in the old French carts, and then shipped to New Orleans and on the Ohio river in flat and keel boats.

### IRON MOUNTAIN.

During these early lead discoveries, in the midst of a vast wilderness, there stood 42 miles west of St. Genevieve, now Missouri, the most extraordinary and immense deposit of iron ores that the world ever produced, known as “Iron Mountain” and “Pilot Knob,” with its adjacent iron deposits. The original height of the Iron Mountain was 228 feet above the valley, its base covered an area of 500 acres of land, its shape was of a conical character. The Pilot Knob, lying



THE IRON MOUNTAIN.



six miles south of the Iron Mountain, had an elevation of 440 feet above its base, covered an area of 553 acres. It rises like a pyramid to the clouds.

The Iron Mountain was an original grant by the Spaniards to the Francis Vallé heirs, containing twenty-four thousand acres of land, which was confirmed to Joseph Pratte by Congress July 4, 1836. The "Pilot Knob" was public land belonging to the U. S. Government, and was afterwards entered as such by Livingston Van Doren, Henry Pease, and J. D. Peers in the year 1836. These last parties named purchased the Iron Mountain property and formed a corporation of these two valuable properties, known as the "Missouri Iron Company," by an act of the Missouri Legislature of Dec. 31st, 1836, with a capital of five millions of dollars, contemplating the erection of iron furnaces, and the project of a railroad from these iron deposits to the Mississippi river. Notwithstanding these flattering prospects of success by this "Missouri Iron Company," it failed in its projects.

Other parties after this organized a corporation of the Pilot Knob and Sheppard Mountain in a company known as the "Madison Iron and Mining Company," established in November, 1843, under the management of Hon. Conrad C. Ziegler and Evariste Pratte.

The Iron Mountain was organized in a separate company under the style of "American Iron

Company," in the year 1845. It was composed of Pierre Chouteau, Felix Vallé, James Harrison, C. C. Ziegler, John P. Scott, August Belmont, Samuel Ward and Evariste Pratte.

These iron deposits remained unproductive and unworked until 1845 at Iron Mountain and 1847 at Pilot Knob, when at these two periods a large force was used to mine these iron ores. Mr. Featherstonbaugh's geologist report to Congress in 1836 stated, "There was a single locality of iron offering all the resources of Sweden, and of which it was impossible to estimate the value by any other terms than of a nation's want." Mr. C. A. Zietz, of New York, with large experience in iron works, in the year 1837 stated that the iron ores of these mountains bear 70 per cent., being of the best quality. It is readily wrought into good bar iron or steel from the native ore in a common blacksmith fire; and that horseshoes, knife blades and hatchets of this ore are frequently made in common blacksmith shops; that they are the best ores that he saw in Europe. The opinions of Professors Schoolcraft, Sheppard and Nicolet all point out the great value of this extraordinary deposit of iron, which is confirmed by the geological survey made by the State of Missouri.

The first shipment in Missouri of iron from Iron Mountain and Pilot Knob to St. Genevieve over the plank road was in 1853.



COMPARATIVE TABLE.

Pig metal shipped :			
Up Ohio River	-	-	2,119 tons.
To St. Louis	-	-	1,317 tons.
			Total 3 436 tons
Blooms shipped :			
Up Ohio River	-	11 097 pieces,	1,313,857 lbs.
To St. Louis	-	4,089 pieces,	691,923 lbs.
			Total 2 005,780 lbs.
Left at St. Genevieve for shipment :			
Pig metal	-	-	3,000 tons.
Blooms	-	-	400 tons.

Great increase of mineral wealth in Missouri in 1874--disposed annually in St. Louis :

Lead	-	-	-	-	-	\$3,000,000.
Iron	-	-	-	-	-	3 000,000.
Coal	-	-	-	-	-	1,000,000.
Fire Clay	-	-	-	-	-	500,000.
Spelter and Zinc ores	-	-	-	-	-	500,000.
Cobalt and Nickel	-	-	-	-	-	100,000.
Kaolin, Ochres and other Minerals	-	-	-	-	-	400,000.
Granite and Sandstones	-	-	-	-	-	500,000.

The annual mineral wealth of Missouri then aggregated about ten millions of dollars.

Around these iron deposits lay large granite fields, one known as "Granite Mountain," southwest of "Iron Mountain" ; also the "Syenitic Granite" lying east of "Pilot Knob." Southwest of Pilot Knob exists a valuable marble quarry. Throughout this old St. Genevieve district exist large quantities of building materials, and minerals of various kinds.

Miners and other explorers settled in this district, valuable mines were excavated by them, and now bear their names. Within a circle of fifty miles from the town of St. Genevieve, no country presented such mineral wealth. The town of St. Genevieve from the earliest times (1735 to 1855) was the only prominent depot for all the minerals of Upper Louisiana. When we examine the statistics of the mineral fields of the world, we find there is no part of the globe, except the St. Genevieve district, embracing such varieties and abundance of minerals and building materials. In the old world, they find minerals buried beneath the ground, while here how different the scene presented to the vision of mortal man! We see vast regions of minerals rising from the earth, forming mountains and pyramids, kissing the rising sun and brilliantly glowing in their crystal-like clusters.

#### THE OLD TOWN OF ST. GENEVIEVE.

The original St. Genevieve was known by the name of "Le vieux Village,"—the old town; was located about three miles south of the present St. Genevieve, in what is known as "Le Grand Champ"—the big field, and was settled in the year 1735, being the oldest settlement in former Upper Louisiana, a portion of which is now

Missouri, west of the Mississippi river. The old town was abandoned in 1785, on account of the great flood of the Father of Waters during that year, and known among its inhabitants as "l'année des grandes eaux" (the year of the great waters), which destroyed all the settlements and the improvements in the lowlands of the valley in its mighty sweep to the gulf. Originally, this "Le Grand Champ" contained about four thousand arpents of land, all under one fence, and cultivated in common by the inhabitants, but now diminished to three thousand arpents by the encroachments of the river. "Le Grand Champ" (the big field) is one of the most beautiful and fertile bottoms of land on the face of the globe, and is every year decorated by the richest profusion of products which furnishes most of the necessities of life to the inhabitants of St. Genevieve, and also gives employment to a great number of its citizens in the cultivation of its rich and inexhaustible soil.

The present city of St. Genevieve is beautifully located on the verdant banks of the grand Mississippi, about sixty miles below the future great city of the world—St. Louis; and sits in beauty amid surrounding and smiling hills. The city of St. Genevieve was first settled by French emigration in 1785, as before stated, by the inhabitants of "le Vieux Village de Sainte-Geneviève," (the old village of St. Genevieve), Cahokia, Kaskaskia, Fort Chartres, and other settle-

ments of Illinois, on account of the great flood of that year, which induced them to seek safety here against calamities of that character in the future. The overflow of the Mississippi in the year 1785 has never been equaled since this fearful waste of waters, for the valley was one vast sea from bluff to bluff, and presented a sight never to be forgotten by the many to which it brought destruction.

The original settlers of "Le vieux village" and of the present city of St. Genevieve were : François Vallé, commandant of the post ; Jean-Baptiste Vallé, Sr., the last commandant of the post ; Joseph Loisel, Jean-Baptiste Maurice, François Maurice, François Coleman, Jacques Boyer, Henri Maurice, Parfait Dufour, Joseph Béquette, Jean-Baptiste Thomure, Joseph Govreau, Louis Bolduc, Jean-Baptiste St. Gemme, Laurent Gaborury, Jean Beauvais, B. N. Janis, and J. B. T. Pratte and others. These persons were all remarkable for their strong constitution, simplicity of manners, honesty of purpose, and hospitality ; endowed naturally with good minds without the advantages of an education, they were free from ostentation and excess of pleasures except such as were of an innocent character. Their dress was remarkably plain : they wore heavy cotton or gingham pants, without the support of suspenders, but fastened by a belt and clasp around the waist ; without vests ; a blue or colored skirt, a white Mackinaw blanket with a

“capuchon,” and moccassin shoes, completed the toilet of the citizens of early St. Genevieve. The apparel of the women of those days was simplicity itself, and would cause a smile from our fair ones could it be seen to-day. They wore a cotton or calico dress; their shoulders and breast ornamented with a mantlet; neck adorned with a rich Madras handkerchief, and their feet encased in beautiful moccassin shoes. Those of advanced age of both sexes wore a blue or Madras handkerchief, which encircled their heads.

The occupations of the patriarchs of St. Genevieve were as cultivators of the soil and voyagers with barges and keel-boats to the city of New Orleans, and traders of goods for furs, peltries and lead, the latter being the money of the country. They encountered many privations, and passed through the ordeal of many romantic adventures of a savage life, and well deserved the appellation of the “pioneers of the West.”

The inhabitants were of a happy and contented disposition and much attached to each other. The family government was of a patriarchal character, and respect, obedience, and love, were highly prized and greatly practiced, and truly can it be said of them that “they were a band of brothers.” But a few years ago one of those patriarchs could be seen in the city of St. Genevieve leaning on the staff of old age with ease and grace, his head bleached with the snows of nearly a hundred years. This remarkable man was

Jean-Baptiste Vallé, Sr., the last commandant of the post of St. Genevieve. His wife also lived to an old age, loved and venerated by all. Some years previous to their death, and in accordance with an old French custom, they were remarried after a half century's enjoyment of marriage life. It was a grand and imposing ceremony to see this venerable couple renewing the first vows of their early affection and love.

#### THE INDIANS.

The Indians who inhabited the immediate vicinity of the town of St. Genevieve at the time of its early settlement were a tribe of Peorias encamped south of the town along the bluffs that front the "big field." They were the remnants of a warlike tribe of the Illinois, and warm friends and strongly attached to the French inhabitants, who afterwards protected them from the neighboring Indians and marauders. In the district of St. Genevieve during the occupation of the French and Spanish government there were many Indian villages. One they called Le Grand Village Sauvage (the big Indian village), named by the Indians Challicathe, was south of St. Genevieve, and contained about 500 inhabitants, and was built on what is called La Petite Rivière à la



THE SISTER OF TECUMSEH.





Pomme (or Apple creek), and now lies within the borders of Perry county. This village was located on the north of the creek and occupied by a tribe called Chawanons. They were industrious and brave. Their cabins were constructed of solid logs, and well cemented with a greasy dirt and other materials which effectually protected them from the inclemency of the weather. They possessed many horses, keeping a large number of them on hand in case of attack by other war-like bands of savages who roamed through the country. The Chawanons were a tall, finely developed and robust-looking people. Their women were pretty and exceedingly swift of foot, and in dress were decorated with the most brilliant feathers, silver trinkets, &c. They cultivated corn and other products of the field, and were far more civilized than the generality of the other Indian tribes in Upper Louisiana. They worshiped the Great Spirit, and believed that after death an abundance of all earthly things awaited them beyond the dark river.

The sister of the great Indian chief Tecumseh resided there. She was remarkable for her beauty and intelligence, and whilst on a visit to some neighboring tribes at New Madrid, Missouri, became acquainted with and enamoured of a French Creole by the name of François Maisonville, and shortly afterwards they were married according to Indian custom. Tecumseh, having visited Upper Louisiana immediately after the marriage

for the purpose of exciting the various tribes to war, heard of it and became fierce and indignant, and forced his sister to return to Apple Creek village, where she remained for some time, but soon returned to her husband after Tecumseh left. They resided many years in New Madrid and raised a large family. Some of their descendants are now living there.

The Chawanons had two great feasts yearly—the first in the spring when sowing their grain, which they called “ Le Feu Nouveau ” ( the new fire ); the second when the corn changed color, “ Fête du petit blé ” ( the feast of small wheat ). This remarkable tribe of Indians, after the change of government by which the country passed into the hands of the United States, folded their tents and left for the far West, and have passed from history as a tribe, having been absorbed into some of the many tribes on our Western frontier.

#### A LETTER FROM THE SPANISH GOVERNOR.

The letter of the Spanish Governor, Manuel Gayoso, of Louisiana, to the Chawanons, is so full of kindness and wisdom, that I here insert it :

“DON MANUEL GAYOSO DE LAMOS, Brigadier de las Real Exercitos, Gobernador General, Vice Patrono Real de las Provincias de la Louisiana, y Florida Occidental, Inspector de las Tropas Veteranas y Milicias de ellas—

*Aux Chefs et hommes considérés de la Nation des Chawanons, résidant dans le Territoire de S. M. C. des Illinois :*

MES CHERS ENFANTS : J'ai reçu la parole que vous m'avez envoyée par les gens de votre nation, qui sont descendus ici ; je les ai vus avec beaucoup de plaisir, parce que j'aime votre nation.

Je vois que vous vous souvenez de moi, que vous suivez toujours la voie du bon sens, et que vous êtes disposés à profiter des bons conseils.

Oui mes enfants, je vous chéris, et je vous distingue parmi ceux qui ne font que courir, perdant leur temps, et écoutant qui les détourne du chemin de leur chasse, et de leur labourage, et de la paix ; mais je suis bien aise que mes enfants les Chawanons, ne soient pas de même.

Je suis bien aise de les voir parmi mes enfants blancs, et faire leurs champs ensemble. J'ai donné mes ordres au Lieutenant-Gouverneur des Illinois pour qu'il vous regarde avec tendresse, et vous traite comme des blancs, puisque vous vous conduisez comme eux. Malgré que j'aie dit tout ceci, à vos gens ici, je le mets par écrit, pour que cela ne s'oublie pas.

Mes chers enfans, que le soleil brille toujours sur vous ; puissiez-vous faire une bonne chasse ; que votre feu soit toujours allumé, et que vos chemins soient toujours blancs et unis.

A la Nouvelle-Orléans ce 17 May 1799.

MANUEL GAYOSO DE LAMOS.

[TRANSLATION.]

DON MANUEL GAYOSO DE LAMOS, Brigadier of the Royal Service, Governor General, Royal Vice-Regent of the Provinces of Louisiana and Western Florida, Inspector of Veteran and Militia forces of the same :

*To the Chiefs and notable men of the Chawanon Nation, residents of the Territory of Her C. M. of the Illinois :*

MY DEAR CHILDREN : I have received the talk which you have sent me through the people of your Nation, who have come down here ; I have seen them with much pleasure, for I love your Nation.

I see that you remember me, and that you still follow the path of good sense, and that you are disposed to profit by good counsels.

Yes, my children, I cherish you, and I set you apart from those who are roving, squandering their time, and listening to whoever turns them away from their hunting paths, and from their plowings, and from peace ; but I am much pleased that my children the Chawanons are not so.

I am very glad to see them among my white children, tilling their fields together.

I have given my orders to the Lieut.-Governor of Illinois, that he should regard you with tenderness, and should treat you the same as white men, since you behave like them.

Although I have said all this, to your people here, I put it in writing so that it shall not be forgotten

My dear children : May the sun ever shine on you ; may you have a profitable hunt ; may your fire never go out ; and may your paths be always white and smooth.

In New Orleans, the 17th of May, 1779.

MANUEL GAYOSO DE LAMOS.

REMINISCENCES OF UPPER LOUISIANA.

After the delivery of the territory of Illinois east of the Mississippi by France to England, in 1765, the French inhabitants of Kaskaskia, Fort Chartres, Prairie du Rocher and Cahokia, began to remove to St. Louis and St. Genevieve, owing to their great aversion to living under the English flag. They were at the time, under the impression that the territory west of the Mississippi yet belonged to France. Hence St. Ange de Belle Rive, a French officer, after the delivery of Fort Chartres to the English, assumed command of the post of St. Louis in the latter part of 1765, and exercised civil and military authority until Spain took actual possession of Louisiana in 1769- Whilst St. Ange was acting as commandant of St. Louis, the post of St. Genevieve was placed under the command of Chevalier Rocheblave, both of these officers acting under the French flag. During this short period of five years the French inhabitants claimed Upper Louisiana and owed allegiance to France, notwithstanding the cession of France to Spain.

The first legal proceedings of record at St. Genevieve was under Commandant Rocheblave, on the 16th of May, 1766, which records and proceedings were kept by M. Robinet, notary and

greffier. Both of these officers exercised their official duties from May 16, 1766, to November 22, 1769, when possession of Upper Louisiana was given to his Catholic majesty of Spain.

St. Genevieve, though settled as early as 1735, had no regular courts or officers until the 16th of May, 1766, when Rocheblave took command of the post.

#### THE FIRST MARRIAGE CONTRACT.

The first legal proceedings under Rocheblave being on the 19th of May, 1766, in relation to a marriage contract between Pierre Roy and Jeanette Lalonde; then follows the second sale of land between individuals. The first sale of land was made by Pierre Ariflone to Henri Carpentier, one by Joseph Le Don to LeFebre du Couquette, and one lot containing one and one-half arpents by Guillaume Derouselle to François Vallé; also the sale of salt works on the Saline river, with ten negroes and a lot of cattle, by John Lagrange to one Blowin. In the year 1767 André Vignon takes an appeal from the decision of Commandant Rocheblave to the<sup>e</sup> supreme council of New Orleans. Then follow other proceedings to November 22, 1769.

The Spaniards on the last day and year took

possession, at St. Genevieve, of Upper Louisiana, when Joseph Labruxière assumed in the name of Spain, the functions of judge of the post of "Illinois," and appointed at the same time and place Cabazie, as notary and greffier. These two officers acted in these capacities until Don François Vallé, père, was made Commandant of the post of St. Genevieve by the Spanish government. Vallé assumed his office early in the year 1770, and acted in that capacity until September 1783. Commandant Don François Vallé, père, died at the old town of St. Genevieve, in the "big field of St. Genevieve," September 23, 1783, being then sixty-eight years of age. He was succeeded in office by Don Francisco Cartabona de Oro, Don Henri Peroux, and by Don François Vallé, fils : the two Vallés, father and son, acting most of the time from 1770 to 1804. Don François Vallé, fils, died in the city of Saint Genevieve on the sixth day of March, 1804, only four days before Captain Stoddard took possession of Upper Louisiana at St. Louis. Commandant Vallé, fils, was buried under his pew in the old Catholic church at the city of St. Genevieve.

At the death of Don Francis Vallé fils, he was succeeded by his brother, Don Jean-Baptiste Vallé, who was reappointed by Lieutenant-Governor Amos Stoddard from March 10, 1804 to October, 1804, with the power of a Spanish Commander, for the post of St. Genevieve.

Governor Delassus, on the 17th of February, 1804, ordered Commandant Vallé, to have Paschall Detchmendy's claim (in what is now Washington county, Missouri,) to be surveyed by Mr. Maddin, deputy surveyor under Antoine Soulard, the then surveyor under the Spaniards. But some inhabitants armed themselves to prevent this survey, and threatened harm to any person, who attempted it. Governor Delassus, after the change of government, requested Lieutenant-Governor Stoddard to enforce this order on the 30th of March 1804, but the latter declined to do so, for the reason that it took place under the Spanish regime, that the United States could not act in this matter.

#### IMPORTANT ORDER OF GOV. DELASSUS.

On the 10th of August, 1804, Governor Delassus requested and ordered Commandant Vallé, as per order of the Marquis Casa Calvo, to deliver to him the Government correspondence of the Spaniards (at all posts of Upper Louisiana) that had no relation to suits, deeds, grants of land, or with individual fortunes and interest of the inhabitants. He also demanded an inventory of those papers already delivered to the United



States; to return to him all correspondence of a public nature belonging to Spain, according to stipulations between France and the United States; also to deliver to him the four cannons, at St. Genevieve, belonging to Spain. This order virtually deprived the historian of the history of the policy and motives of the public acts of Spain and France during their dominion in America.

Governor Dehault Delassus left St. Louis in October, 1804, for New Orleans, with his soldiers, and ammunitions of war which were not included in the sale of the Louisiana Territory.

The Spanish commanders exercised these offices with leniency, moderation, and justice. Commandant Don Vallé, fils, the last Spanish commander at St. Genevieve, resided on what is known as South Gabori creek. His house was a large one-story frame building, with wide galleries and porches. The commandant was judge of all civil and criminal matters, and was military commandant of the post. His decision was law, and had to be obeyed. As a precaution and punishment, when criminals were charged with any crime they were exhibited before the inhabitants every Sunday in front of the Catholic church after divine service, that they might be known and recognized by the whole community.

## THE MILITARY.

At an early period, being in the year 1780, known as " L'Année du Coup " (the year of the blow), the inhabitants of " Le Vieux Village de Ste. Geneviève " were called upon to defend St. Louis, which was then threatened to be attacked by the English and different tribes of Indians. Sylvio Francisco Cartabona, a government officer, was ordered to St. Genevieve by Don Ferdinand Leyba, the Lieutenant-Governor of the post of St. Louis, to enlist a company of militiamen for the protection of St. Louis. A company numbering sixty men was soon raised under the command of Captain Charles Vallé, brother of the commandant of the post of St. Genevieve, and immediately left in a keel-boat for St. Louis, where they were stationed, or quartered, in a house south of the cathedral church. Lieutenant-Governor Leyba did not furnish them with ammunition, which they were destitute of. This caused much disappointment and mortification to the gallant men who had left their homes for the purpose of defending their friends in St. Louis. Little did the St. Genevieve company think at the time that the Lieutenant-Governor of St. Louis

was in bad faith toward them and the town of St. Louis, but things and actions afterwards proved it and placed the St. Genevieve company in a false position, as they had partly to obey orders under the military despotism of Spain, which was most repugnant to their feelings.

Previous to the attack on St. Louis, an old man by the name of Gronelle had warned the officers of the post that an attack would be made, for which he was treated with contempt and sent to prison. About the time of the attack upon St. Louis, the captain of the St. Genevieve company, seeing that he was deprived of powder by Lieutenant-Governor Don Leyba, sent five men to take three kegs of powder which an old lady resident of the town had at the time, but did not wish to deliver up, insisting that they should do her no harm if she refused to give it up. They, however, conveyed the powder to headquarters. Captain Vallé at this time seeing the treachery of the Lieutenant-Governor, determined not to obey orders.

While Captain Vallé was temporarily absent from his headquarters, Leyba ordered the company to march up into a garret and to spike their guns, and some of the men had partly obeyed the order, and it was about being executed by the whole company when the brave captain of the St. Genevieve company came up, and at once perceiving the treacherous intent of the order, refused and said, "Que son poste est près de son

canon et non dans un grenier, et que si l'ennemi venait, il serait prêt à se défendre," (that his post was near his cannon and not in a garret; if the enemy came that he would be ready to defend himself,) and standing to his post he ordered his men to stand by him, and did all he could under the circumstances to aid the citizens of St. Louis when that post was attacked by the enemy.

It is a well-known fact that Lieutenant-Governor Leyba acted in bad faith and was despised by all the inhabitants of St. Louis and St. Genevieve on account of his treacherous conduct, and feeling conscious of his own foul acts died shortly after. After the attack on St. Louis had failed the company returned to their home, "Le vieux village de Ste. Geneviève."

During the war of 1812, Captain Henry Dodge, afterwards Governor of Wisconsin, raised at St. Genevieve a company of riflemen for defense against Indian depredations. A company called "The South Missouri Guards," with a roll of 115 men, commanded by Captain Firmin A. Rozier, was organized August 23, 1846. They recruited for service in California, but owing to the lateness of the season, failing to cross the plains were stationed at Fort Leavenworth. Captain Thomas M. Horine, of St. Genevieve, during the Mexican war, raised a company of men; ordered to Santa Fé under Colonel Sterling Price. Colonel Joseph Bogy, commissioned by Governor Gamble at the opening of the civil war in 1861, organized

the militia of St. Genevieve County and other counties, of about one thousand men for protection of Southeast Missouri against contemplated invasion from Arkansas, and were in active service about one month. Captain Gustave St. Gem was commissioned captain of Missouri militia by Governor Gamble in 1861, and ordered by General Farrar to act as provost marshal of St. Genevieve county, in which capacity he was engaged when, in September, 1863, he organized Company K., of which he was commissioned captain, in the Forty-seventh regiment, Missouri Volunteers, Colonel Thomas C. Fletcher, commanding. Captain St. Gem, while in the volunteer service, was ordered by General Rosecranz, commanding department of Missouri, to act as provost marshal of the Eighth sub-district of the St. Louis military district, comprising the counties of St. Genevieve, Perry and Jefferson, where he remained on duty until April 8, 1865, and was succeeded by Lieutenant John O'Neil. An illumination of the town of St. Genevieve was ordered by Provost Marshal O'Neil April 12, 1865. The citizens of St. Genevieve, June 26, 1865, presented Lieutenant O'Neil and Captain S. Good each with a sword for their gallantry. Lieutenant Colonel Felix St. James—a native and resident of the place—of the Thirteenth regiment of Missouri infantry volunteers participated in the attack on Fort Donelson, and was fatally wounded at the battle of Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862, and died shortly after-

ward, and his remains were removed to St. Genevieve.

General Osterhaus' division was stationed at St. Genevieve, October 12, 1862, and was ordered to take Little Rock, Arkansas, via Pilot Knob; and was ordered back to St. Genevieve, accompanied by divisions of Generals Carr and Davidson, for transportation, in the month of November, 1862, for the siege of Vicksburg. Colonel Frank Leavenworth organized the militia of St. Genevieve county, October 18, 1864, about 250 men, in connection with Lieutenant Colonel George Bond, and they were disbanded November 17, 1864. Captains William Cousins and Robert Holmes each raised a company of men at St. Genevieve county, who were enlisted in the Confederate army, and remained in the service during the civil war. Colonel S. H. Boyd, with the 24th regiment Missouri Volunteer Infantry, was stationed at Maxwell Hill, St. Genevieve, April 9, 1863.

The town of St. Genevieve was surrounded by a military force during the night of the 15th of August, 1861, by a battalion of Zouaves, commanded by Major John McDonald, since notorious for his trial before United States courts. After seizing the bank he took military possession of the town. The next day he demanded of the president, Firmin A. Rozier, of the branch bank of the Merchants' Bank of St. Louis, located here, the funds of the bank. After some parley the

president delivered them under protest, and upon condition to accompany the battalion to St. Louis on the steamer Hannibal. The Major had come for the money, and kept his eye steadily on his gun, insisting on a peaceable surrender. The money, a large amount, was taken on the steamer, having on board Mr. Rozier, the Major and the battalion of Zouaves. On arriving in St. Louis Mr. Rozier called at headquarters to see General Fremont, for an interview, who that day handed Mayor Howe an order to be delivered to Mr. Rozier for the funds of the bank, which were deposited with Colonel Robert Campbell, president of the Merchants' Bank.

#### LA NOUVELLE BOURBON.

This post was situated about two miles immediately south of the city of St. Genevieve, and nearly opposite to Kaskaskia, on the high bluffs of the Mississippi river. Don Pierre Carlos De-lassus was commandant of the post of "La Nouvelle Bourbon." He was a Frenchman. His family was educated in affluence, but the French revolution caused him with his family to remove to Spain, and afterwards to Upper Louisiana. He was "chevalier de grande croix de l'ordre royal de Saint-Michel." He was appointed by Spain commander of the post of "La Nouvelle

Bourbon." He was the father of Lieutenant-Governor Charles Dehault Delassus, of Upper Louisiana. Don Charles Dehault Delassus, his son, was a native of Spain. At Andalusia, in Spain, in the war between France and Spain, Captain Charles Dehault Delassus led a desperate charge of Spanish troops and won the victory. Afterward he was made by the Spanish king commander of the post of New Madrid, from 1797 to 1799; then Lieutenant-Governor of Upper Louisiana from 1799 to March 10, 1804, and was the person who delivered Upper Louisiana to Captain Stoddard, an officer of the United States.

### THE FIRST CHURCH

in Upper Louisiana was built by Catholics in "Le vieux village de Ste. Geneviève," previous to "L'année des Grandes Eaux," being a large wooden structure, which was removed to the present city of St. Genevieve in 1794. When this church became so old and dilapidated it was abandoned, in about the year 1835. The erection of the old rock Catholic church was completed in 1831 under the surveillance of Rd X. Dahman, an old soldier and officer in the cavalry service of Napoleon the Great. It was consecrated November 22, 1837, by Bishop Rosatti, of St. Louis.



This old rock church was struck by lightning July 17, 1841; it struck the gable end and the fluid descended along the roof to the sacristy, then pierced the wall, striking the frame of the picture of St. Genevieve; it then descended to the altar, taking away its gilding, and passed to the ground floor. Mr. John Doyle, at the time, was praying before the altar, and was struck by the lightning and considerably stunned, yet recovered from the shock. There is now a large brick church erected over the site of the old rock church, under the supervision of Rev. Francis X. Weiss. The corner stone of this new edifice was laid by Rev. Charles Ziegler, a native of St. Genevieve, now a parish priest of St. Louis.

As early as 1760 three Jesuit missionaries settled at St. Genevieve in their cassocks, with breviary in hand, and the cross upon their breast. They commenced their religious instructions to a few inhabitants, and visited the surrounding tribes of Indians, amongst whom vespers and matins were chanted. The following is the list of ministers that officiated at St. Genevieve under the Spanish, French and Territorial governments: Fathers P. F. Watrin, J. B. Salveneuve and J. Lamorinie from 1760 to 1764; Father J. L. Maurin from 1764 to 1768; Father P. Gibault 1768 to 1773; Father F. Hilaire from 1773 to 1777; Father P. Gibault from 1778 to 1784; Father Louis Guiques from 1786 to 1789; Father De St. Pierre from 1789 to 1797; Father James Max-

well from 1796 to 1814; Father D. Oliver from 1814 to 1816; Father Henri Pratte from 1816 to 1821; Rev. Francis X. Dahman, 1822 to 1840; Rev. Hyppolite Gondolpho, 1840; Rev. Jean Marie St. Cyre, 1849; Rev. P. L. Hendricks, 1862; Francis X. Wiess, 1865 to 1885.

### FIRST RELIGIOUS RECORDS.

The first baptism in "le vieux village de Ste.-Geneviève," was on the 24th of February, 1760, and was performed by a Jesuit missionary named P. F. Watrin. The first religious marriage which occurred at the same place was on the 30th October, 1764, celebrated by Father J. L. Maurin. The parties married were Marck Constatino Canada and a Miss Suzan Henn, the latter being formerly of Pennsylvania, of German descent. This Marck Constatino was living previous to this, eight years with a tribe of Indians known as the Chawanons, being near St. Genevieve. This Suzan Henn was made a prisoner about five years before this marriage by the same tribe of Indians. They lived together, and had two children, one named Marie, three years old, and the other Genevieve, two years old. After this marriage they regained their liberty. The witnesses to this marriage are Jean Ganion and T. Tebriege.

ROMANTIC MARRIAGE, DURING THE REGIME OF  
SPAIN.

Mr. Henry Fry an American, who emigrated in early times, about 1797, in St. Genevieve district, on Big river, now St. Francis county, Missouri, had contracted marriage with a Miss Baker, a sister of Isaac Baker, a well-to-do farmer and a respectable man. At that time, in that section of country, there were no officers to perform marriages, hence they had to go to St. Genevieve to celebrate their nuptials. Mr. Fry, accompanied by his bride, and her two sisters, the Misses Baker, with their brother Aaron Baker, with other friends, started for St. Genevieve, with glad hearts, and with high anticipations of the occasion.

When they arrived in an open prairie, near Terre Blue creek, some nine miles north of the town of Farmington, Missouri, they encountered a band of roving Osage Indians, who were, at the time, engaged in horse racing. The party were soon followed and captured, with their horses, guns, furs, and peltries belonging to Mr. Fry, worth about fifteen hundred dollars. M. Henry Fry, was the first attacked and robbed of all his clothes, ordered to run, which he refused, causing an Indian to strike him with his ramrod violently upon his bare hips, whilst he

had to endure other indignities. The whole party were then stripped of their clothing and ornaments, and were left, like our first parents, in a state of nature. The only one of the party not disturbed was Aaron Baker, owing to the blotches on his face, which alarmed them, thinking it was small-pox. One of these Misses Baker was a very stout woman. Whilst defending herself, and clinging to her clothes, she was dragged upon fresh burnt stubbles, scarifying her back with tattoo marks she carried to her death. Of the two sisters of the bride, afterwards one married John McRee, the other Alexander McCoy; they left large families, and many descendants in St. Francis county, Missouri.

After this painful occurrence, all returned to their homes, which postponed this marriage for one year, and it afterwards took place at St. Genevieve. Mr. Fry was a pioneer of this country, lived a long and happy life to the wonderful age of one hundred and fifteen years.

#### FRENCH CUSTOMS.

The customs of Paris was the rule of the French inhabitants in North America. The commandants of the different French posts generally regulated the police of the country, adapting their cir-

circumstances and wants according to their surroundings. The French, in early times, lived with great economy and simplicity, being jovial, polite and hospitable. The French women were devout and remarkably virtuous. Their great amusement was the dance, they especially enjoyed the king's ball, and the "Guignolée." At the king's ball a large cake was made, where inside were four beans, the parties who drew them were made kings of the next ball, each king selected a queen, these kings generally made a present to their queens. At these reunions they were always provided with bouillon, cakes, croquignolles, and coffee. They always selected two aged persons, called provosts, who selected the gentlemen and ladies, to open their ball. The *fiddle* was selected, as the musical instrument whose music was most congenial to their taste and fancy. The distinction of wealth was unknown, all dressed alike, all met as equals in the ball-rooms as well as at their feasts and religious ceremonies. The inhabitants were all Catholics, and greatly attached to the Catholic missionaries.

### LA GUIGNOLEE.

On New Year's eve, the French inhabitants assembled together, decorated with fantastic costumes to visit each family, to sing and dance the Guignolée; it was an occasion of much mirth and good feeling.

THE SONG.

Bonsoir le maître et la maîtresse,  
Et tout le monde du logis ;  
Pour le premier jour de l'année,  
La Guignolée vous nous devez.  
Si vous n'avez rien à nous donner,  
Dites-nous le,  
Nous vous demandons pas grand chose,  
Une échinée,  
Une échinée n'est pas bien longue,  
De quatre-vingt dix pieds de long,  
Encore nous demandons pas grand-chose,  
La fille aînée de la maison,  
Nous lui ferons faire bonne chère  
Nous lui ferons chauffer les pieds.  
Nous saluons la compagnie,  
Et la prions nous excuser,  
Si l'on a fait quelque folie.  
C'était pour nous desennuyer.  
Une autre fois nous prendons garde  
Quand sera temps d'y revenir.  
Dansons la guenille,  
Dansons la guenille,  
Dansons la guenille !

CHORUS. Bonsoir le maître et la maîtresse,  
Et tout le monde du logis.

THE COMMON FIELDS, PLOUGHS AND CHARRETTES.

The French inhabitants, had a common field, always attached to their villages and towns, each was assigned a piece of land to cultivate, with the condition to keep in repair the fences, in propor-

tion to his share. If any one abandoned his land, it was sold at public sale, at the church door, with original condition of repair of fence.

The early inhabitants cultivated their land with a wooden plough, seldom ploughed with horses, but oxen, which were yoked by the horns. Their horses were generally fastened to the charrette (cart) which had no iron fastening or iron ties, but two wheels, made out of well-seasoned white oak, except the hub of gum wood. These charrettes were worked with one to three horses, one before the others, having twisted rawhides for their traces. This conveyance was used for all kinds of work, as well as for family use. When the women traveled in them, they were seated in chairs that were tied to the railings of the charrette. They were, in early times, well adapted for transportation of goods or persons, during all the year, except winter, when resort was had in strong and comfortable sledges.

#### FRENCH DOMINION.

Monette, the historian, well remarks: "Under the French Dominion the government was mild and paternal; a mixture of civil and military rule, without the technicalities of the one or the severity of the other. The commandant was invested with despotic authority; yet he rarely exercised

his power otherwise than in a kind and paternal manner, and for the general welfare of his people. In return, he received not only their obedience and respect, but also their love.”

#### TERRITORIAL INHABITANTS FROM 1804 TO 1820.

The purchase of Louisiana by the United States from the French Government took place in 1803. Soon after the change of government, in 1804, a new population came and settled here from Virginia, Kentucky and Europe. Amongst some of those who became citizens were Hon. John Scott, delegate to Congress; General Henry Dodge and Augustus C. Dodge, his son, both afterwards United States Senators; James Maxwell, a prominent Irish Catholic priest; Judge William James, from Kentucky; Hon. Lewis F. Linn, the model senator; Ferdinand Rozier, Sr. and his partner the ornithologist Audubon; Hon. George W. Jones, afterwards United States Senator from Iowa; James Clemens, of St. Louis; Dr. Hardrage Lane, M. Jacques Guibourd, from France; Hon. Joseph Bogy, father of Senator Lewis V. Bogy; Charles Gregoire, Thomas Crittenden, Nathaniel Pope, William Shanon, Aaron Elliot, Thomas Oliver, Dr. Walter Fenwick and Man. Butler, the historian, Thomas



Madden and others of distinction. These persons settled here under the Territorial Government from 1804 to 1820, previous to the organization of the State of Missouri, and many distinguished themselves in their profession, and possessed remarkable talent. Many of them held important offices under the Government of the United States, and were ornaments to society.

ST. GENEVIEVE ACADEMY.—1808.

This Academy was incorporated by an act of the Governor of the Territory of Louisiana, on the 21st of June 1808. The trustees were James Maxwell, Jean-Baptiste Vallé, Jacques Guibourd, St. Gem Beauvais, Francis Jarvis, Jean-Baptiste Pratte, Walter Fenvick, Andrew Henry, Timothy Phelps, Aaron Elliot, Nathaniel Pope, Joseph Spencer, John Scott, William James, Thomas Oliver, Joshua Penneman, William Shanon, George Bullit, Henry Dodge and Henry Diel.

This old Academy, which sits on a beautiful hill overlooking the town, is a large stone building, and was built in 1808 by the old inhabitants of St. Genevieve. Man, Butler, the historian of Kentucky, in 1812 became one of its teachers, by contract with the trustees of said academy. Afterwards this academy was abandoned for a

few years, until it was again brought into a flourishing condition. under the control of Firmin A. Rozier, January 1854, and continued until 1862, when the troubles of the civil war prevented its continuance.

In early times, the citizens of St. Genevieve District made great efforts to establish good schools. When Bishop Dubourg of Louisiana, accompanied by Bishop Flaget, of Kentucky, visited St. Genevieve, December 17, 1817, Bishop Dubourg had been called upon to take charge of the St. Genevieve Academy, but for some cause or another, it was not carried out. However the "St. Mary's College," at the Barrens, now in Perry county, Missouri, was established in 1819 by the Lazarist Fathers, under the direction of Bishop Dubourg. This college acquired a great reputation in the West, and was conducted by persons of intellect, virtue and learning, who afterwards acquired national reputations. This college was afterwards removed to Cape Girardeau in the year 1838. Near this St. Mary's College the Sisters of Loretto, from Kentucky, established a female academy in 1823, under the control of Mother Benedict Fenwick, supervised by Reverend Father Rosatti, then co-adjutor of Bishop Dubourg. This academy prospered for several years, and was afterwards abandoned.

The Sisters of Loretto, on the 25th of June 1837, established a female academy in the city of St. Genevieve, conducted then by Mother Odille

Delassus, a daughter of the former commander of the post of New Bourbon. This academy, in 1851 passed under the control of the Sisters of St. Joseph, who have built a large and commodious convent opposite the present Catholic church in the city of St. Genevieve.

#### TERRITORIAL COURTS OF ST. GENEVIEVE.

The Territorial district courts of St. Genevieve District from 1805 to 1821, were the Common Pleas, Quarter Sessions, and Oyer and Terminer. The persons who have presided over them were: Nathaniel Cook, Joseph Pratte, Amos Bird, Isadore Moore, John Smith, T. St. Gem Beauvais, Jacques Guibourd, Paschal Detchmenny, Jean-Baptiste Vallé, Thomas Madden, John Hawkins and Williams James. At different periods these courts were presided and supervised by Judges James B. Lucas, Otto Shrader and David Barton, who with others composed the Superior Court of the Territory.

The Territorial circuit court of St. Genevieve District was established in 1814, was presided over by Judge Richard S. Thomas until 1824. He was a Virginian by birth, came to St. Genevieve about the year 1810, served as judge ten years; at the near termination of his term was

impeached, but acquitted ; afterwards removed to Jackson, Missouri. Whilst on his way to Greenville, was thrown off of his horse, seriously injured, died shortly afterwards and was buried at Jackson, Missouri. Thomas Oliver acted as clerk of said court. Israel Dodge and Henry Dodge were the sheriffs of this Territorial District from 1804 to 1821. The attorneys who attended the courts at St. Genevieve, from 1805 to 1821 were Nathaniel Pope, John Scott, William C. Carr, Edward Hempstead, Thomas H. Benton, Otto Shrader, Thomas H. Crittenden, George Bullit, Rufus Easton and H. M. Brackenridge.

#### FATAL ENCOUNTER OF CAPTAIN DE MUN.

An ancient family known as Depeste, and also one known as De Mun, settled in St. Genevieve in the year 1808. A melancholy death occurred to one of them, being Auguste De Mun, the son of Jacques De Mun, captain of dragoons of St. Domingo. He had made, from information, injurious remarks of Mr. William McCarthur, about coining money. Mr. McCarthur being well connected, and a brother-in-law of Dr. Lewis F. Linn, sent a challenge to De Mun, which was not accepted, because he thought him unworthy of his

steel. McCarthur denounced DeMun in public, which gave him greater offense. They met at the old Territorial court house, whilst court was in session, at St. Genevieve. As McCarthur was coming down and De Mun was going up the stair-way, they both fired, and poor De Mun fell mortally wounded, and expired shortly afterwards. They were, at the time, both candidates for the Territorial House of Representatives. Mr. De Mun was buried in the Catholic graveyard in St. Genevieve, August 28, 1816, but no tombstone marks his place of burial.

#### MISSOURI TERRITORIAL ASSEMBLY.

The General Assembly of the Territorial Government of Missouri, met in St. Louis, December 7, 1812, consisting of a Council of nine and a house of representatives. The delegates from St. Genevieve District at that time, were Honorable George Bullit, Judge Richard S. Thomas and Isaac McGready. In the Council of nine, St. Genevieve was represented by Hon. John Scott and Reverend James Maxwell, a learned and practical Irish Catholic priest. Both were appointed by the President of the United States. On December 6, 1813, Hon. George Bullit was elected speaker of the House, and December 5, 1814, Hon. James Caldwell occupied the same

position, both from the St. Genevieve district. Afterwards different persons were elected in this district to the Territorial Legislature up to the formation of the State Constitution.

### THE CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTION OF 1820.

This convention to form a State constitution and organize the State of Missouri, met in St. Louis, June 12, 1820, and concluded their labors July 19, 1820.

The delegates from St. Genevieve, were:— John D. Cook, John Scott, Henry Dodge, Robert T. Brown.

### THE POPULATION AND COMMERCE OF ST. GENEVIEVE.

The census taken by the Spaniards in 1799, when Lieutenant-Governor Delassus acted for Upper Louisiana, for St. Genevieve was 945 persons; and at the change of government in 1804, it was 1300, one-third being slaves. The commerce of St. Genevieve, in early times consisted principally in lead and peltries and they had a large commerce on the Mississippi and Ohio rivers, by keel-boat transportation. The com-

mercial men of St. Genevieve during the Territorial government from 1804 to 1820, were remarkably active and successful in their business pursuits. At that time many merchants of St. Louis had to make their purchases at St. Genevieve. M. Ferdinand Rozier, Sr., a prominent merchant in those days, traveled from St. Genevieve to the city of Philadelphia six times on horseback to transact business. Such trips at present would be looked upon as singular and romantic. Mr. Louis Bolduc, an old merchant, became by commerce very rich. M. Thomas Madlin, an American, also of wealth, offered to wager with Bolduc as to which had most wealth. Bolduc soon silenced him by requesting him to bring his half bushel to measure his silver money, which he kept, at the time, in his cellar.

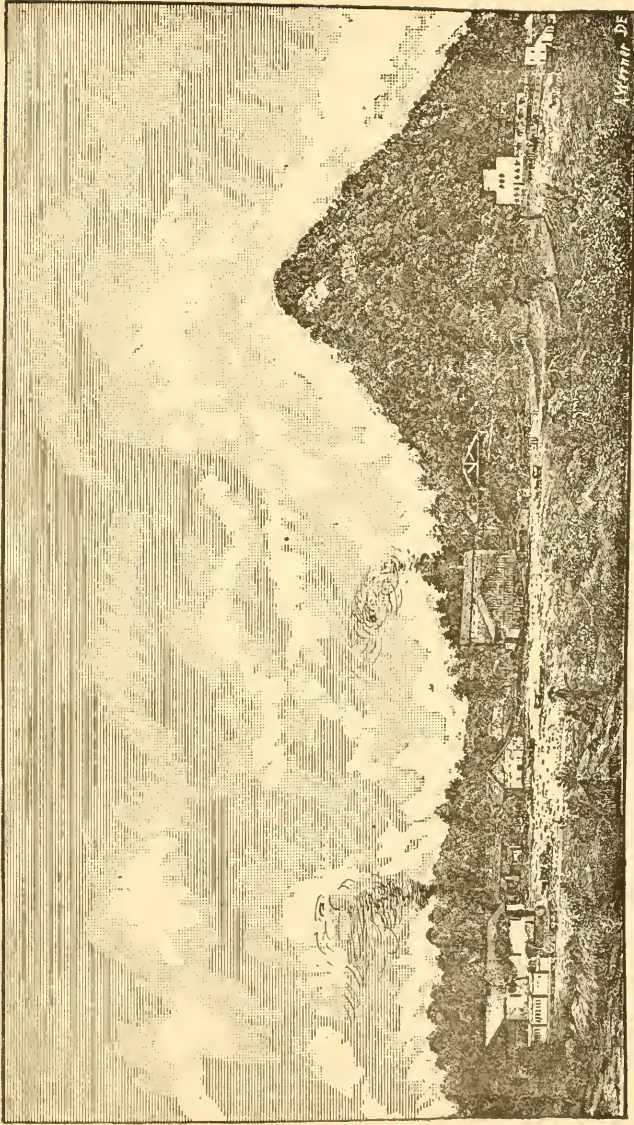
The wealthy and enterprising house of Ménard & Vallé was established in 1817, the memorable year that steam power was introduced in Upper Louisiana, with the "Pike," commanded by Captain Jacob Reed, who entered and fastened his boat August 1, 1817, at the port of St. Genevieve. This commercial firm had a large trade with the Indian tribes. Pierre Ménard, of Kaskaskia, one of the partners, was then Indian Agent, and controlled a large business throughout the West. St. Genevieve, from the first settlement, was an important commercial point, for it was the depot of all lead, copper, nickel, cobalt and iron, from

the Iron Mountain, Pilot Knob, Mine Lamotte, Vallé Mines and Potosi up to the year 1857, when the Iron Mountain Railroad was built, that deprived St. Genevieve of this trade, which was afterwards carried to St. Louis.

### STEAMBOAT CATASTROPHE.

The steamer "Doctor Franklin No. 2," in August, 1852, collapsed a flue, at Turkey Island, on the Mississippi, about four miles above St. Genevieve, scalding and killing nearly all her deck passengers and crew. She was towed down to the St. Genevieve wharf. Amongst the passengers was the famous novel writer Ned Buntline, who escaped unhurt. The sight on board of the steamer was a distressing and mournful one. The cabin of the boat was strewed with men and women, uttering the most fearful cries, and undergoing the most cruel sufferings. Strong men were there blistered with steam, yet cold in death. Both engineers were blown into the river, and at the time of the explosion some jumped overboard and were lost. In one berth lay a wife and mother dead, with a child still clasped in her arms, whilst others were frightfully mutilated. The citizens of St. Genevieve rendered all the aid and assistance to those unfortunate persons, and had the dead decently buried in the graveyard.





PILOT KNOB, MISSOURI.

W. H. R. DE



## TELEGRAPH LINE AND PLANK ROAD.

The first telegraph line in Missouri connected Nashville to St. Louis, passed through St. Genevieve, and was established in the year 1850, but afterwards discontinued. At this period nothing seemed so wonderful and miraculous, to witness the flashes of intelligence flying with the rapidity of lightning, through the first town of Upper Louisiana.

The first important improvement in the State of Missouri was the plank road made between St. Genevieve and Iron Mountain, which took place August 20th, 1851, being forty-two miles in length. So important was this first great enterprise considered, that a corps of talented engineers were employed to construct and supervise this work, which consisted of James P. Kirkwood, chief engineer of the Missouri Pacific Railroad; William R. Singleton, an active and competent engineer, now of Washington City; also the unfortunate Sullivan, of the Gasconade bridge disaster; and the young, active and talented Joseph A. Miller, now of Providence, Rhode Island. These scientific persons afterwards acquired a national reputation as civil engineers and railroad builders in Missouri and in the far West. Over this plank road, for a few years, an immense business was

carried on in lead, iron, cobalt, nickel, marble and granite, and agricultural products of all kinds.

OLD ST. GENEVIEVE, FORT CHARTRES AND  
KASKASKIA.

It is a remarkable fact, that the first four permanent settlements in the Great West, on the banks of the "Father of Waters," have been completely destroyed and swept away by the floods of this monarch of rivers; and strange it is to say, that of Fort Chartres, Kaskaskia, "Le Vieux village de Ste.-Geneviève" and New Madrid nothing is left of them. Their old landmarks and monuments, even many of the tombs and graves of the pioneers have been carried away by the floods: and like the immortal De Soto's remains, have been swept into the great waters of the gulf, buried forever as is often the fate of the founders of nations and empires.

FRENCH POPULATION.

To the period of 1820, the population of the towns of Missouri was of French origin. They possessed great industry and hospitality of character and were the pioneers of all great commer-

cial enterprises in the far West. They felled the forests, excavated mines, established trading posts, planted the standards of civilization along the banks of our great rivers. Their intellect was of a strong and vigorous character, they had honesty of purpose, were of iron constitution, and their promises and engagements were kept most sacredly and religiously. They were the gallant sons of France and the compeers of Lafayette. Owing to the change of government and the great wave of immigration to the West, there are now but few of their progeny who remain to commemorate and chant their gallantry and virtues, and to weep over the graves of this noble race, who first planted the standard of liberty and Christianity over the broad domains of the great State of Missouri.

The people of St. Genevieve, exactly since a century and a half, have lived under four different governments without encountering great disasters or bloody wars, in such remarkable changes, which are generally accompanied with great disorders and misfortunes. They first lived and were subjects of the great French nation to the year 1769; secondly they fell under the jurisdiction and dominion of Spain until 1800; again under the Napoleon dynasty, until 1804; and lastly, and thank God, under the flag of the United States of America, from the last period to the present time, and to be hoped for all future time.

NEWSPAPERS PUBLISHED AT ST. GENEVIEVE.

The first paper was "The Correspondent and Record," in 1821, 1822 and 1823 by Thomas Folley; "State Gazette," in 1833, edited by William B. Baker; "Missouri Democrat," edited by P. G. Ferguson; 1849, "Pioneer," edited by James Lindsay and Concanon; 1850, "Creole," edited by Charles C. Rozier, also "The Pioneer," by James H. Dixon, in 1850; 1854, "Independent," edited by Amable Rozier; 1859, "Missouri Gazette," edited by E. K. Eaton; 1859, "Plaindealer," edited by O. D. Harris; 1865, "Representative," edited by Halleck & Brother; 1868, "News and Advertiser," edited by G. M. Setto; 1872, "Fair Play," edited by Henry Smith; 1872, "Freie Presse and Freie Blatter," edited by Frank Kline; 1874, "Free Press," edited by Kline & Earnst; 1874, "Freie Presse," edited by Dr. C. F. Carsour; 1879, "Fair Play" edited by Henry Smith; "Valley Herald," Henry & Shaw, and "St. Genevieve Herald," by Joseph A. Earnst, in 1882-5.

MEMBERS OF THE LEGISLATURE OF MISSOURI  
FROM ST. GENEVIEVE.

State Senators—Hon. Joseph Bogy, Sr., 1822; Hon. Lewis F. Linn, 1830; Hon. Charles C. Vallé, 1834; Hon. Conrad C. Ziegler, 1854; Hon. Firmin A. Rozier, 1872.

Lower House—Hon. A. G. Bird, 1822 ; Hon. Peter Dagget, 1824 ; Hon. Beverly Allen, 1826 ; Hon. John S. Barret, 1828 ; Hon. Robert Moore, 1830 ; Hon. Joseph Bogy, Sr., 1832 ; Hon. Clement Detchmendy, 1834-6 ; Hon. Allen Holoman, 1838 ; Hon. Thomas M. Horine, 1840 ; Hon. Joseph Coffman, 1842 ; Hon. Robert J. Boas, 1844 ; Hon. Jeremiah Robinson, 1846 ; Hon. Johnson B. Clardy, 1848 ; Hon. Jesse B. Robbins, 1850 ; Hon. Sifroid Rousfin, 1852 ; Hon. Lewis V. Bogy, 1854 ; Hon. Firmin A. Rozier, 1856 ; Hon. Robert J. Boas, 1858 ; Hon. John C. Watkins, 1860 ; Hon. David C. Tuttle, 1862 ; Hon. George Bond, 1864 ; Hon. Joseph Bogy, Jr., 1868 ; Hon. Antoine Beltrami, 1870 ; Hon. Robert J. Madison, 1872 ; Hon. William Cox, 1874 ; Hon. Jasper N. Burks, 1876 ; Hon. William Cox, 1878 ; Hon. L. S. Patterson, 1880 ; Hon. T. P. Boyer, 1884.

JUDGES OF THE CIRCUIT COURT, FROM 1820  
TO 1879.

First judge, Richard S. Thomas, 1820 ; second judge, John D. Cook, 1825 ; third judge, William Scott, 1835 ; fourth judge, Henry Schurids, 1837 ; fifth judge, James Evans, 1837 ; sixth judge, David Sterigere, 1839 ; seventh judge, John H. Stone, 1844 ; eighth judge, James W. Owens, 1863 ; ninth judge, William Carter,

1864; tenth judge, John B. Robinson, 1874; eleventh judge, W. N. Nalie, 1878; twelfth judge, John H. Nicholson, 1879, thirteenth judge, James D. Fox, 1880-85.

#### CLERKS OF THE COURT.

First, Thomas Oliver; second, Joseph D. Grafton; third, Jesse B. Robbins; fourth, John N. Littlejohn; fifth, Charles G. Rozier; sixth, John L. Bogy; seventh, Joseph Beaman; eighth, Jules Guyon.

#### SHERIFFS—1820 TO 1879.

First, Henry Dodge; second, Francis Vallé; third, John S. Barret; fourth, John Bapt. Vital St. Gem; fifth, Eloy Lecompte; sixth, Emmanuel Pratte; seventh, William Adams; eighth, Jesse B. Robbins; ninth, Robert J. Boas; tenth, William C. Warner; eleventh, Francis I. Moreau; twelfth, Jacob Boas; thirteenth, George D. Scott; fourteenth, Andrew Anderson; fifteenth, Robert J. Madison; sixteenth, Joseph Huck; seventeenth, James J. Wilson; eighteenth, Louis Norman; nineteenth, Leon Yokeest.



GRAND CELEBRATION OF THE ANNIVERSARY OF  
ST. GENEVIEVE, JULY 21, 1885, AT THE  
CITY OF ST. GENEVIEVE.

A throng of people attended this celebration. It was the anniversary of the "Old Town of St. Genevieve" of one hundred and fifty years; and of the city of St. Genevieve of one hundred years, being the first settlement west of Mississippi river in Upper Louisiana. The place selected for meeting was on "Maxwell Hill," a beautiful hill that overlooks the river, Kaskaskia and Fort Chartres.

In attendance was a military company, known as "St. Louis Cavalry and Artillery," commanded by Captain R. L. Henry, which fired the national salute of 21 guns, at six o'clock and thirty minutes, to commence the celebration of the day, when "High Mass" was chanted, and Father Huttler preached the sermon upon the exemplary lives of the old pioneers. In attendance on "Maxwell Hill," was the Schuchert's Cornet Band from Chester, Illinois.

The arrival of the large steamer Will S. Hays, crowded with people from St. Louis, also arrived the steamer Bellefontaine from Chester, also the Nick Swaer from Kaskaskia river. A procession was formed from the city to "Maxwell Hill"

preceded by the St. Genevieve Cornet Band, followed by the Mayor of the city, city officers, clergymen, county officers, and the citizens; accompanied by a beautiful float conducted by the ladies.

When the procession reached the grand entrance of the hill, the three flags of France, Spain, and the United States were unfurled, whilst the artillery announced that the procession and the people had arrived to celebrate so interesting an occasion. The assemblage was addressed by General Firmin A. Rozier, the appointed orator of the day, who was followed by Honorable Alex. J. P. Garesché, Colonel F. T. Lederberger, Major William Cozzens, and Commodore Lyndon A. Smith, secretary of Mayor Francis of St. Louis.

Over five thousand persons had congregated for this celebration; and were enjoying themselves and partaking the good things of this world, when suddenly, at four o'clock in the evening, the clouds began to darken the earth, and a terrific storm suddenly arose, that scattered the people in all directions, reminding us of the great flood and storm of one hundred years ago, which made so memorable the year 1785.

St. Genevieve, as the first permanent settlement west of the Mississippi river, in the then Great West, has the honor of having first planted



THE LANDING OF LACLEDE IN ST. LOUIS.—From an old Print.



the banner of civilization, and in the language of  
the poet :

“ I greet the land of the West,  
Whose banners of stars, over the world unfold,  
Whose empire overshadows Atlantic’s wide breast,  
And opens the Sunset, its great gateway of gold.”

## II.—THE ST. LOUIS DISTRICT. — HIS- TORY OF ST. LOUIS

AFTER Laclède Liguist and his associates obtained a charter from the Governor of Louisiana of an exclusive trade with the Indians of the Missouri and the Upper Mississippi as far as St. Peters River, they embarked on their small flotilla at New Orleans on the 3d day of August, 1763, to stem the strong current of the Father of Waters, and to select a site on its magnificent banks to build a trading-post, which they did on the 15th day of February, 1764, giving it the name of St. Louis. In the prophetic language of Laclède, its founder, "That he had found a situation where he intended to establish a settlement which might become hereafter one of the finest cities in America." This judicious location was made on the banks of the Mississippi about twenty miles below the mouth of the Missouri. These two mighty rivers, whose waters roll down to the Gulf of Mexico, then traversing a rash wilderness, had as yet been only ruffled by the Indian canoe. No sooner had these persons felled the forest and opened a large street parallel to the river, and cleared it of its incumbrances, that they erected

log houses suitable as a trading-post. Shortly afterwards, on November 10th, 1764, a tribe of Missouri Indians, about one hundred and fifty warriors, with their squaws, visited this location, seemed highly pleased with its pioneers, determined to pitch their tents amongst them permanently, but Laclede for good reasons got rid of them ; they soon departed, and strange as it may appear, never troubled them afterwards.

The following negotiation and intercourse was held by Laclede and these savages, the chiefs holding the following language :

“ We are worthy of pity : for we are like the ducks and geese, seeking some clear water upon which to rest themselves, and to obtain an easy existence. We know of no better place than where we are. We mean to build our wigwams around your village. We shall be your children, and you will be our father.”

Laclede here closed the talk, promising them a reply, at a meeting to take place the next day, on which occasion he said :

“ You told me yesterday, that you were like the ducks and geese, who go on traveling until they find a fine country, where they can rest themselves and obtain an easy living ; you told me you were worthy of pity ; that you were looking out for a spot to settle upon, and had not found one more suitable than this ; that you would build your village around me ; that we should live all together like friends. I wish to answer you like

a good father, and I must say that, if you imitate the ducks and geese, you follow guides that have no forethought, for if they had any, they would not settle on clear water, where they can be seen by the eagle, who would catch them. This would not be the case were they to select a retired spot, well shadowed by trees. You Missouriias, you would not be devoured by birds of prey, but by the Red Men who have been so long warring against you, and have already so much reduced your numbers. They are at this moment not far from here, watching the English to prevent them from taking possession of their grounds. If they discover that you are here, they will kill your warriors, and make slaves of your wives and children. This is what will happen to you, if as you say, you mean to follow the example of the ducks and geese, instead of listening to the counsels of men who reflect. You chiefs and warriors think now whether, it is not more prudent, that you leave here quickly, rather than be crushed by superior numbers of your enemies, in sight of your butchered old men, and your women and children torn to pieces, and their limbs scattered to the dogs and vultures. Recollect that it is the good father who speaks to you. Meditate well what he has said, and come back to-night with your answer."

The whole tribe in council informed him they would follow his advice, but solicited provisions for the women and children, also powder for their



warriors, which Laclede gave them. The next day, they left, and ascended the river of their fathers, the Missouri, and returned to their villages and firesides.

MILITARY AND CIVIL ORGANIZATION OF THE POST  
OF ST. LOUIS IN 1765.

Soon after these savages left, St. Louis received an accession of French inhabitants from the Illinois, greatly owing to their aversion of living under the dominion of England. The fortunate arrival of St. Ange de Belle Rive, in the latter part of October, 1765, at the post of St. Louis, with his military company, consisting of two lieutenants and twenty soldiers, accompanied by the civil officers of the Illinois, established order, which gave great confidence to the inhabitants, security to life and property, on the west side of the Mississippi river, then known as Upper Louisiana.

St. Ange was a distinguished French officer, former commander of the Wabash, and afterwards of Fort Chartres. He acted as commander of the post of St. Louis from the latter part of October, 1765, until the Spaniards took possession of Upper Louisiana. St. Ange after this, became a

Spanish officer, Captain in the "Spanish regiment of Louisiana." He died in St. Louis, December 27th, 1774, reaching the ripe age of seventy-five years, much esteemed as a gallant officer, having the honor of being the first commander of the post of St. Louis, under the French lilies. During the command of St. Ange, Captain Francisco Rios, a Spanish officer, with troops, in the name of Spain, attempted to take possession of Upper Louisiana, August 11th, 1767, without displacing St. Ange. Owing to the hostility, French inhabitants induced Rios July 17th, 1769 to return to New Orleans with his troops to join Count O'Reily. Whilst Rios was in Upper Louisiana he erected a fort, called "Fort Prince Charles" on a high bluff, on the south side of the Missouri river, about fourteen miles north of St. Louis. This fort was afterwards occupied by General James Wilkerson in the year 1805, with United States troops.

When St. Ange left "Fort Chartres" for St. Louis, he was accompanied by the civil authorities of "Illinois," consisting of Joseph Lefèbre Dubruisseaux, Attorney General of the King, and Judge in the Royal Jurisdiction, which office he held until his death, which occurred in St. Louis April 3d, 1767. He was also at the time, the King's Military Storekeeper. The other important officer was Joseph Labuxière, the deputy of the King's attorney, secretary and notaire public, of the Illinois. After the death of Dubruisseaux,

he became the principal civil officer under St. Ange, and acted as such, at the post of St. Louis, until St. Ange delivered the St. Louis post to the Spaniards on May 20th, 1770. The French officers, who took charge of Upper Louisiana from 1765 to 1770, were regular officers then of the Illinois country under the French lilies; hence their authority was recognized willingly by the inhabitants of the west side of the Mississippi.

The patriarchs of St. Louis were Laclède, Chouteau, Labadie, Lefèbre, Condé, Céré, Labuxière, Chauvin, Sarpy, St. Ange, Guyon, Ortes, Lajoie, Vasquez and others, all persons of prominence and boldness of character, of jovial disposition, with great honesty of purpose. Their occupations were as hunters, traders in furs and peltries, some few as cultivators of the soil, others as voyageurs on western waters. With strong arms and stout hearts, they planted on this monarch river, the banners of civilization, and laid the foundation of the great Central City of the United States.

#### CHURCHES IN ST. LOUIS.

Under a rude tent, that was erected in the midst of the forest of St. Louis, that fringed the banks of the Mississippi, stood Father T. L. Maurin, a Catholic missionary, dressed in his cas-

sock, adorned by a cross on his breast, officiating as a priest in the years 1764 to 1768. In the year 1768, a small chapel was erected on the north-east corner of what was known as "Cathedral Block." Afterward a Catholic church was built, thirty feet by sixty feet, on this block which was consecrated January 28, 1776, the year of the American Independence. This was replaced by a cathedral, which was consecrated to God on the 26th day of October, 1834, by Bishop Rosati. A portion of this Catholic block was occupied as a graveyard, which was afterwards abandoned as such, and the graves removed to other places, whilst fine buildings now cover this former cemetery. Such is the fate of the founders of cities, in the new world, whose ashes are disturbed often by the rapid tread of emigration.

#### CARONDELET.

A short time after the settlement of St. Louis, Carondelet was founded by Delore de Trigette, in the year 1767, in honor of Baron Carondelet. St. Charles was established later, in 1769, by Blanchette Chasseur; also Florissant, by Burosier Dunegan, in 1776, the year of the declaration of the American Independence; these places all became important points in the great West.

ST. LOUIS INVADED BY THE ENGLISH AND INDIANS

MAY 26TH 1780.

Some fifteen years after the settlement of St. Louis, its commerce had greatly increased, when its population numbered six hundred and eighty-seven persons (687). Its important position, had excited the jealousy of the English, along the western lakes, against the Spaniards, who controlled the country west of the Mississippi river, and were then at war with England, whilst Spain sympathized with the Colonies of America during the revolution : hence their enmity and attack upon the post of St. Louis. An event in 1779 occurred that hastened a warlike expedition in 1780. One Dominique Ducherme, a Canadian and Indian trader, who lived at intervals at Cahokia and Mackinaw, being a man of great influence among the Indians along the western lakes, obtained a supply of Indian goods, and proceeded up the Missouri river to trade with the Indians, when a party of Spanish soldiers from the port of St. Louis overtook him ; they seized his boat of goods, whilst Ducherme made his escape only with his gun and life. This caused him to swear vengeance, against the post of St. Louis.

Ducherme returned to the lakes, and raised the war-whoop among the savages, Canadians and

English, against the Spaniards at the post of St. Louis. At this time St. Louis had a stockade consisting of upright posts set in two rows, filled with earth; it was partially carried around the exterior of the village, with three openings for egress to the commons and common-fields. It was protected by a fort mounted with a few cannons.

At this period St. Louis was under the dominion of Spain, but nearly all its inhabitants were French, whilst France and Spain were at war with England. The original district of St. Louis, established by the Spaniards, was bounded north by the Missouri river, east by the Mississippi river, south by the Merrimac river, west indefinitely.

#### BOAT AND CARGO CAPTURED BY THE ENGLISH AND INDIANS.

In March 1780, previous to the attack on St. Louis, rumors were rife of an English and Indian army, to devastate this post and Cahokia. To show the English and Indian animosity, Charles Gratiot, a merchant, then living at Cahokia, sent up the Mississippi river a barge loaded with provisions and stores in March 1780 to Prairie du Chien, then in possession of the English and Indians: this boat was under the command of John B. Cardinal. It was captured with its car-

go, some thirty miles below Prairie du Chien, and the crew made prisoners and ironed. Charles Gratiot previous to this, had obtained permission from Governor Leyba, and the American authority at Kaskaskia, to trade upon the Mississippi river above St. Louis.

#### BRITISH AND INDIANS.

The British Commandant, at Mackinackinac, organized along the western lakes, a force of one hundred and forty regulars, and about fourteen hundred Indians and Canadians, who marched to the post of St. Louis. A part of these troops crossed the Mississippi and the Missouri rivers, above St. Louis, so as to assault it by the rear, when the attack was made on the 26th of May, 1780, known as "l'année du coup." The assault was sudden and quickly over, a few persons killed on the prairie back of the post, whilst through the whole expedition, about sixty persons were killed or made prisoners of war. The citizens of St. Louis and the company from St. Genevieve, did all that could be done, under the strange and unaccountable orders of Governor Leyba, Commandant of the post, which deprived the citizens and militia of powder, ordering some cannons to be spiked, and his tyrannical conduct to the St. Genevieve company, who had come to defend St. Louis.

The behaviour of this company during the attack on St. Louis has been variously judged, but all criticism is groundless, as the writer has often taken occasion to prove from authentic sources. The following commentary on one of his early pleas is quoted from the *Western Journal* :

“ In noticing this attack on St. Louis, page 78 of the 2d Vol. of the *Western Journal*, we used the following language : ‘ The inhabitants of the town repelled the attack with spirit and bravery, but the greater part of a company of militia that had been brought from St. Genevieve to aid in the defense of the town, either through fear or treachery, hid themselves in a garret, during the attack—while the Lieutenant-Governor, Leyba, who, as it was believed, had been bribed by the British, was guilty of the most open acts of treachery to the citizens.’

“ We made the foregoing statement on the authority, though, perhaps, not in the precise words, of Mr. Primm’s anniversary address. Not doubting but that Mr. Primm, and also, the author of the article before us, have both stated the circumstances attending the attack on St. Louis according to their belief in the sources whence they respectively obtained their information, yet, in our estimation, the account of Mr. Rozier appears more consistent with the character and relations of the parties concerned.



“It is admitted on all hands that the Lieutenant-Governor Leyba, was a traitor ; and we must suppose that he had sufficient inducements, from some quarter, for his conduct ; but it is difficult to imagine what motives could induce the men of St. Genevieve to betray their countrymen and neighbors ; especially in a country containing so few civilized inhabitants. Nor, should we admit the suspicion of cowardice, in respect to such men, without very strong proof.

“ Inhabitants of a small village surrounded by savages ; remote from the protection and succor of civilized men ; voyageurs on the Mississippi, enured to hardships and dangers ; and, withal descended from a gallant race, the men of St. Genevieve could scarcely be guilty of cowardice in the defense of a neighboring village of their own countrymen. The treachery of Leyba, a Spanish officer, for whom the inhabitants of St. Genevieve could have had but little sympathy, sufficiently accounts, in our opinion, for the conduct of the St. Genevieve company. Those hardy pioneers prepared the way for the settlement of this country ; they suffered many privations ; and it devolves upon us of the present generation, as a sacred duty, to preserve the record of their virtues ; and as far as truth will permit rescue their character from every dishonorable imputation. This we owe to them, to the honor of our common country, and to history.”

During this attack, the post of St. Louis was saved by Colonel Clark and his troops, who suddenly appeared, which caused the retreat of the British and Indians.

CHANSON DE L'ANNÉE DU COUP.

PAR JOHN P. TRUDEAU.

LE GOUVERNEUR.

Courrier, qu'y a-t-il de nouveau ?  
Tu parais troublé du cerveau :  
Les Illinois sont-ils conquis ?  
Les Anglais ont-ils pris le pays ?  
Tu parais tout déconcerté ;  
Quel grand malheur est arrivé ?

LE COURRIER.

Grand Général, tout est perdu,  
S'il n'est promptement secouru :  
Nous avons été attaqués,—  
Nous sommes encore menacés ;  
Beaucoup de monde ont été tués,  
Sans pouvoir secours leur donner.

Quand l'ennemi a paru,  
Aux armes chacun a couru :  
Habitans, bourgeois, joli gens,  
Vous vous battrez vaillamment ;—  
Mais la défense a été donnée  
De ne point sortir des tranchées.

LE GOUVERNEUR.

Que faisaient-ils en ce moment :  
Étaient-ils tous sans sentiment ?

N'aviez-vous pas ce grand Leyba,  
Et ce fameux Cartabona ;  
Aussi bien que votre Major,  
Et toute la garde du fort ?  
Que faisaient-ils en ce moment,  
Étaient-ils tous sans sentiment ?

Revenez, canaille, revenez !  
De long-temps vous ne nous surprendrez !  
Nous avons dans notre rempart,  
Pour défendre notre étendard,  
Un Commandant brave et prudent,  
Qui vous étrillera vaillamment !

Calvé, ce petit chaudronnier,  
Se croirait-il brave guerrier,  
Pour avoir fait assassiner  
Son neveu, pauvre infortuné ?  
Pour voir ses parens, ses amis  
Abandonnés, dans la prairie,  
A des barbares pleins de furie ?

Canadiens sans cœur, sans honneur,  
Faites égorger vos frères, vos sœurs ;  
Vous vous êtes ensuite échappés  
Par une fuite précipitée.

DECLARATION OF WAR, IN 1793, AGAINST  
THE OSAGES, BY ZENON TRUDEAU,  
LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR.

The "Petits and Grands Osages," a tribe of Indians, living in Missouri, became very troublesome and were continually making depredations which induced Lieutenant-Governor Zenon Trudeau, at St. Louis, to declare war against this tribe of Indians on June 12, 1793. At this period the Spanish military force was not very effective, and the Spaniards had often to submit to outrages and to sue for peace. Captain Stoddard relates one instance, amongst many others, to explain the character of the Missouri Indians.

"While a kind of predatory war raged in 1794 between one of these tribes and the whites, a peace was concluded in a singular manner. A war chief, with a party of his nation, boldly entered St. Louis and demanded an interview with the Lieutenant-Governor, to whom he said: 'We have come to offer you peace. We have been at war with you many moons, and what have we done? Nothing. Our warriors have tried every means to meet yours in battle, but you will not, you dare not fight us; you are a parcel of old women. What can be done with such a people, but to make peace, since you will

not fight? I come therefore, to offer you peace, and to bury the hatchet.' The Spanish government was obliged to bear the insult, and to grant the desired peace."

#### ANECDOTES OF ST. LOUIS.

The French descendants of St. Louis, still retain numerous anecdotes of their ancestors, that describe the unsophisticated nature of the Missourians. This is one of them :

A genuine Missourian, it is related, was hovering for some time, around the stall of a negro trader, situated on the bank of the Mississippi, in Lower Louisiana. The dealer was a Kentucky merchant, who, observing him, asked him if he wished to purchase anything. "Yes," said the Missourian, "I would like to buy a negro." He was invited to walk in, made his choice and inquired the price. "Five hundred (500) dollars," said the dealer, "but according to custom, you may have one year's credit upon the purchase." The Missourian, at this proposition, became very uneasy : the idea of having such a load of debt upon him for a whole year, was too much. "No, no," said he, "I rather pay you the six hundred dollars at once, and be done with it." "Very well," said the obliging Kentuckian, "anything to accommodate you."

ANECDOTE OF CARONDELET.

The tenacity with which the old inhabitants adhered to the pursuits of their ancestors is illustrated very forcibly in a single transaction at Carondelet. A passenger landed from one of the steam-boats, that grounded on the bar opposite the town, and accosted a young citizen who was taking his departure for St. Louis with a horse cart-load of wood.

The traveler offered to load the cart with himself and trunk. The proprietor remarked that his cart was loaded with wood. The stranger inquired the value of the load, and was told it was worth seventy-five cents in St. Louis.—“ Throw it off, then,” said he, “and I will give you one dollar for transporting me to the city.” The honest villager smoked one pipe over the proposition, and then, with the utmost civility, declined the proffer, politely remarking: “ My fader have always carry wood to market. I do the same thing — *bonjour monsieur.*”

ST. LOUIS FROM ITS FOUNDATION, IN 1764,

TO 1820.

From the first settlement of St. Louis to 1820, when Missouri was admitted as a State of the Union, the hunters, voyageurs, trappers, and *coureurs des bois*, formed an important element

of its population, for from this source was obtained a great traffic in furs and peltries. These hardy, robust and brave men penetrated our vast forests, explored extensive regions, and navigated the most turbulent streams and rivers, amidst perils and dangers known only to persons inhabiting the great wilderness of the West.

Nicollet well remarks that "they penetrated into the forest, in the midst of numberless tribes of Indians, till then unknown, to explore the extensive regions, between the Mississippi and the Rocky Mountains, and thus created the fur trade of this portion of North America. That they possessed great courage and power of physical endurance, they feared neither the inclemency of the seasons, the pain of hunger, the arrows of the Indians, nor the danger of exposure to wild beasts; never despairing and always cheerful, gifted with the warmest friendship, they knew all the rivers, all the paths and by-paths, and all the recesses of the wilderness."

#### THE CITY OF ST. LOUIS.

The acquisition of Upper Louisiana by the United States, was of great advantage to the city of St. Louis, in its commercial, social, and political organization. Its central position in the Great West, and location upon the banks of a

monarch river, commanding a large commerce, whilst it became the nucleus of our Western troops, compelled the establishment of the mail service, to the great convenience of the inhabitants of the valley of the Mississippi. Its rapid growth and gigantic strides in population, caused as early as 1808, the establishment of the "*Missouri Gazeteer*," a newspaper, which became the organ of the Territorial Legislature. The great fur and peltry trade then grew in the far West to immense proportions, controlling greatly the markets of Europe.

The future of St. Louis no one can foresee, its growth is that of a giant, and nothing can retard its being one of the most populous and wealthy cities of the world. Its extensive connections, railroad lines, and telegraphic communications, will be unsurpassed, in the race for civilization.

#### " BLOODY ISLAND."

It was an island formerly opposite the City of St. Louis, so called from the numerous duels fought there. It was then within the limits of the State of Illinois. There many fatal encounters took place, which brought grief and sorrow to numerous families.



## REMARKABLE DUELS.

### I—BENTON AND LUCAS.

It was in the year 1817, that the famous duel between Senator Thomas H. Benton and Mr. Charles Lucas took place on "Bloody Island." Mr. Darby gives the following history of it:

"Benton went to vote, at a general election; Lucas challenged his vote; Benton denounced him on the spot as a scoundrel. Lucas challenged him. They went over to "Bloody Island" just at sunrise, and fought. The ball from Benton's pistol cut one of the veins in Lucas' neck, and he fell. The seconds reported him unable to stand a second fire. Benton insisted that they should meet again as soon as Lucas got well. The bullet from Lucas' pistol merely grazed Benton's leg. After three months' nursing and care, Lucas got well. They again met at sunrise, on the Island, in mortal combat. They exchanged shots. Benton shot Lucas in the left breast; he fell and expired in about twenty minutes. Before dying, he called Benton to him, gave him his hand, and told him he forgave him. Lucas never touched Benton with his shot. Both pistols were fired so simultaneously that the people on the shore, who heard the report, thought there had been but one shot."

2.—THE FATAL DUEL BETWEEN MAJOR THOMAS BIDDLE, OF THE UNITED STATES ARMY, AND HON. SPENCER PETTIS, MEMBER OF CONGRESS, AUGUST 25, 1831.

This duel, one of the most fatal and bloody that occurred in the West, on Bloody Island, was between Major Thomas Biddle and Hon. Spencer Pettis, occurring in August, 1831. The seconds were Captain Thomas and Major Ben. O'Fallon, of St. Louis. The cause of this duel was very aggravating, and difficult of compromise. The parties met face to face in August, 1831, on the field of honor, where "The pistols were then loaded, and put in the hands of the principals, who were stationed at the distance of five feet apart. The seconds then stood at right angles between the principals. The seconds then cocked their pistols, keeping their eyes on each other and on their principals. They had thrown up for position, when Pettis had won the choice. Everything being ready, the pistols having been loaded, cocked and primed, and put into the hands of the principals, the words were pronounced, according to the rule of duelling—"Are you ready?" Both answered, "We are." The seconds then counted "one—two—three." After the word was given, both principals fired with outstretched arms. The

pistols were twelve to fifteen inches in length and they lapped and struck against each other, as they were discharged. There was scarcely any chance for either to escape instant death. They both fired so simultaneously, that the people on shore heard only one report, and both men fell at the same time."

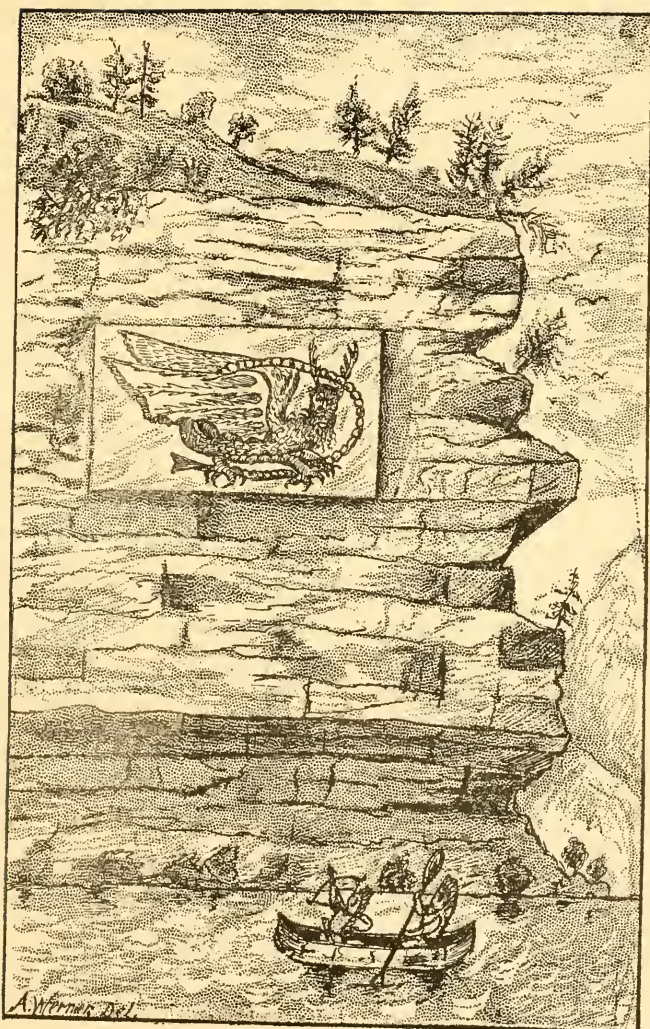
This duel was characterized as one of the most desperate encounters, that had ever occurred in the Great West. Both parties were buried in St. Louis, Missouri.

#### MARQUIS DE LAFAYETTE.

It was on the 29th day of April, 1825, that the steamboat "Natchez" arrived at the port at St. Louis, with brilliant banners and music, announcing the arrival of the distinguished Marquis de Lafayette, when the whole population, without regard to race, turned out to welcome this honored veteran, of the New and Old Worlds. He was accompanied by his son, and by Mr. M. Levasseur his secretary, and other distinguished persons from New Orleans. Lafayette was honored by a splendid banquet and ball, at the City Hotel. This noble and gallant friend of Washington, was received throughout the United States, with open arms, and by a brilliant series of hospitalities and public entertainments, for his noble deeds in behalf of the American people.

This ovation was everywhere under triumphal arches, with these words inscribed, and repeated by the people : " Welcome Lafayette."

The steamer Natchez then proceeded to Kaskaskia, with Lafayette, accompanied by Governor Cole of Illinois. He was driven to the house of General Edgar, a venerable soldier of the revolution, who was then surrounded by a few veterans. Lafayette was feasted by a public ball and dinner. He saw, whilst at Kaskaskia, an Indian woman, named Sciakape, the daughter of Pansiciowa, a chief of one the Six Nations, who, on his death-bed, gave Sciakape (the child of the forest,) a letter from Lafayette, written to her father, for his valour during the American Revolution, to keep as a relic and Manitou, and in times of tribulation of his tribe, to make use of it. This noble daughter of the forest preserved this nearly a half a century, for the letter bore date June 1778. Sciakape whilst in camp on the Kaskaskia river, visited Lafayette at Kaskaskia, showed him this letter, she had kept with so much care. Lafayette was overjoyed at the fact that he was not forgotten by the children of the forest, and felt rejoiced to meet the daughter of this noble warrior, whom he esteemed so highly for his valor and bravery in the dark days of the Revolution. He complimented her for keeping so long this sacred trust, and thanked her from the bottom of his heart for this mark of respect and kindness.



THE PIASA MONSTER.



GREAT FIRE AND CHOLERA IN ST. LOUIS,  
IN 1849.

On the 17th of May, 1849, the steamboat "White Cloud," then anchored near the foot of Cherry street, was discovered on fire, at ten o'clock at night, and shortly was in flames. At the time the "White Cloud" was discovered on fire the wind blew in great force from a north-east direction. During this time, she became loosened from the wharf, and drifted down the current, setting on fire several other steamers which soon communicated with the city. The river and city were illuminated by this steamboat conflagration. This terrible fire soon extended from Locust to Market streets, destroying all the buildings between Second street and the river bank.

At two o'clock A. M. on the 18th, the city reservoir was exhausted. Up to this time the firemen and people had done all they could to stop this great destruction of property. Buildings were blown up, and some valuable lives lost, but about eight o'clock in the morning, after ten hours of devastation, it was quelled. The loss by this great fire was: twenty-three steamers, three barges, one canal boat, with their valuable cargoes, with four hundred buildings, stored with merchandise. The total loss was estimated at three millions of dollars.

### THE CHOLERA.

This terrible epidemic was introduced in St. Louis by steamers from New Orleans, in the latter part of 1848. It broke out in the city January, 1849, and continued until August 10th. During this year the mortality was 8,603, from which 4,613 died of cholera. The mortality among foreigners was much greater than among persons of American birth. Around Chouteau's Pond, and in the newly settled district in the neighborhood of Biddle street, where there were many sinks, holding water, the disease was most fatal. During this epidemic, the wind generally prevailed from east to southeast, accompanied by cloudy weather and copious rains. This mortality was distressing and severely felt, as the population of St. Louis was then about sixty thousand inhabitants. A gloom and pall was thrown over the whole city.

### FLOOD OF 1844.

The great rise in the Mississippi, in the year 1844, called the "Great Flood of 1844," was caused by immense rains, that fell forty days and nights, like the deluge, also accompanied by the melting of snows from the mountains, gave to



the river the appearance of an immense sea. Opposite the city, the waters reached to the bluffs of Illinois, which could be reached by steamboats. A great many persons, along its banks, were driven from their stores and homes, and had to be sheltered in warehouses and public buildings. Along the banks of the Mississippi, the destruction of property was enormous, which reduced thousands to great want and poverty. It was some time before its inhabitants recovered from this disastrous event.

#### THE GREAT BRIDGE.—1874.

It was a great event for St. Louis and the country, when, on the Fourth day of July, 1874, the magnificent steel and iron bridge that spans the great Father of Waters, opposite the City of St. Louis, was completed, being one of the most useful and extraordinary works erected by the genius of man. It will always stand as a great monument of the enterprise of the citizens of St. Louis, and reflect great honor to the architects of this great work. “The first stone of the magnificent steel tubular bridge across the Mississippi river at this point was laid February 28th, 1868, since which time the work steadily progressed under the management of its originator and able chief-engineer, Captain James B. Eads. The bridge consists of three arches, the middle one

being 520 feet clear, and the eastern and western each 502 feet clear. The distance over the river from center to center of abutments is 1,627 feet. The western approach measures 1,150 feet, and eastern 3,500 feet; total length of the bridge and approaches, 6,277 feet, or one mile and about a sixth. The tunnel, which passes west under Washington avenue, and thence south under Eighth street, is 5,000 feet in length. While the main purpose is for a railroad bridge, it is also open for the passage of horse cars, teams and pedestrians. The total cost of the bridge is estimated at between seven and eight millions of dollars."

PIERRE LIGUEST LACLEDE,

The founder of St. Louis, died and was buried at the village called "Poste des Arkansas," on the Arkansas river, on the 20th June, 1778. This bold, brave and indomitable adventurer has left a name, as enduring, as the waters of the Mississippi, that now wash the shores of St. Louis.

It is not my purpose minutely to describe the public buildings of the City of St. Louis, consisting of court house, asylums, churches, school houses, colleges, custom house, public parks, and its railroad connections and wonderful telegraph lines, whilst at present it has reached a population of half a million.

## ST. LOUIS MAGISTRATES.

### CHAIRMEN OF THE TRUSTEES OF ST. LOUIS.

FROM ITS INCORPORATION AS A TOWN, NOVEMBER 9TH, 1809, TO  
ITS INCORPORATION AS A CITY, DECEMBER 9TH, 1822:

1810, Auguste Chouteau.	1817, Elijah Beebe.
1811, Charles Gratiot.	1818, Thomas F. Riddick.
1812, " "	1819, Peter Ferguson.
1813, " "	1820, Pierre Chouteau, Sr.
1814, Clement B. Penrose.	1821, " "
1815, Elijah Beebe.	1822, Tomas McKnight.
1816, " "	

### MAYORS OF ST. LOUIS.

FROM ITS INCORPORATION AS A CITY, DECEMBER 9TH, 1822, TO 1874

1823, Wm. Carr Lane.	1849, James G. Barry.
1824, " " "	1850, Luther M. Kennett.
1825, " " "	1851, " " "
1826, " " "	1852, " " "
1827, " " "	1853, John How.
1828, " " "	1854, " "
1829, Daniel D. Page.	1855, Washington King.
1830, " " "	1856, John How.
1831, " " "	1857, John M. Wimer.
1832, " " "	1858, Oliver D. Filley.
1833, Samuel Merry.	1859, " " "
1834, John W. Johnston.	1860, " " "
1835, John F. Darby.	1861, Daniel G. Taylor.
1836, " " "	1862, " " "
1837, " " "	1863, Chauncey I. Filley.
1838, Wm. Carr Lane.	1864, James S. Thomas.
1839, " " "	1865, " " "
1840, John F. Darby.	1866, " " "
1841, John D. Daggett.	1867, " " "
1842, George Maguire.	1868, " " "
1843, John M. Wimer.	1869, Nathan Cole.
1844, Bernard Pratte.	1870, " "
1845, " "	1871, Joseph Brown.
1846, Peter G. Camden.	1872, " "
1847, Bryan Mullanphy.	1873, " "
1848, John M. Krum.	1874, " "

### III—DISTRICT OF CAPE GIRARDEAU.

THE original District of Cape Girardeau, under the Spaniards, was bounded north by La Rivière à la Pomme (Apple creek), south by Tiwappatee Bottom, east by the Mississippi river and fronting said river, about thirty miles, west indefinitely. This territory originally was occupied by the Shawnee and Delaware Indians, who had several towns within its limits

Cape Girardeau was first settled and founded by Don Louis Lorimier in the year 1794. Le Baron de Carondelet, then Governor-General of Louisiana, granted to Don Louis Lorimier, October 26th, 1795, and January 26th, 1797, two tracts of eight hundred arpents in Upper Louisiana, now Missouri, fronting the Mississippi river, within the above district, upon which the city of Cape Girardeau is now located and which is situated fifty miles above the mouth of the Ohio river, and one hundred and fifty miles below the city of St. Louis.

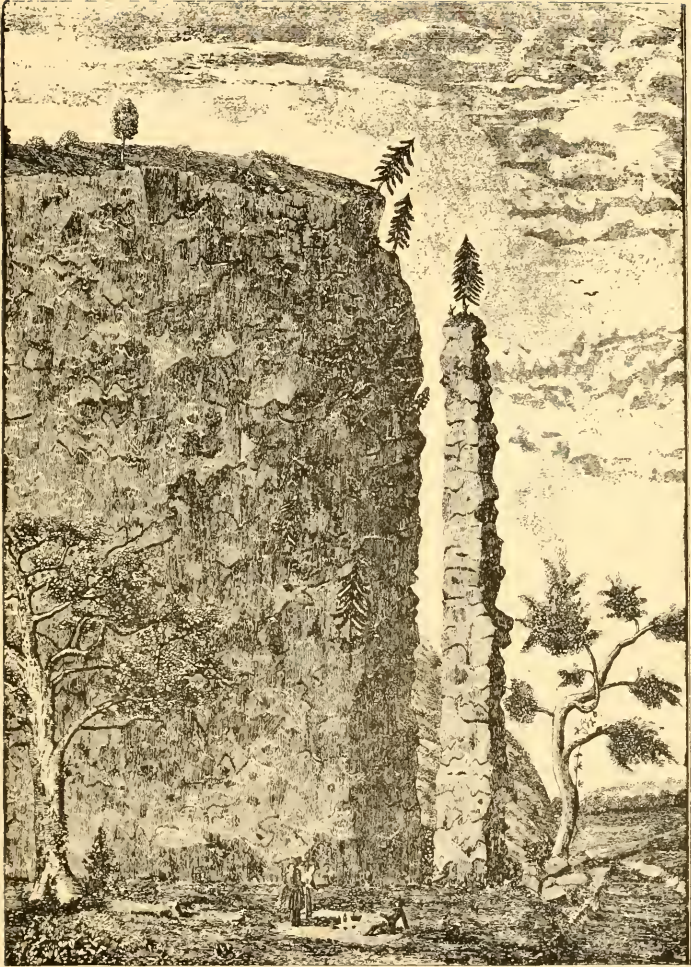
Cape Girardeau lies upon a rich and beautiful marble formation, presents from the river a pleasant view, whilst the city is surrounded by a rich agricultural country, and is serpented by very handsome streams.

Don Louis Lorimier was a native of Canada and born in the year 1749—afterwards removed on the Miami river, Ohio—and his family was of noble blood. He was a well-formed man, nearly six feet high, walked erect and with elastic step, had a handsome face and was an elegant equestrian. His complexion was fair, with blue eyes. He had a profusion of hair, which was tied up in a queue, fastened with ribbons, which he used at times as a whip for his horse, whilst riding. Don Louis Lorimier was fond of dress and display. He had a strong sympathy for the Indians, who idolized him, for he usually joined them in their sports and wild hunts. He spoke the French, English and Indian languages with fluency, which was very advantageous to him in his intercourse with the hunters of the West, and the Indian tribes. He established at the Cape a trading post, where he exchanged goods for furs and peltries. Don Louis Lorimier was in the year 1794 made commander of the Post of Cape Girardeau by the Spanish Government, who had then possession of Upper Louisiana, with full civil and military authority.

Commandant Lorimier married in Canada, Charlotte Bougerville, she being a princess of the French-Indian half-blood. She bore him four sons and three daughters: Louis, Boukerville, Verni, Victor, Maria Louise, Agatha and Lisette. The two sons, Boukerville and Verni, died with-

out marriage, also Lisette, the daughter. Louis Lorimier, the eldest son, married Margaret Penny, who had the following children : Steinback, Archibald, Marselette, Louisa and Odile Lorimier. Maria Louise married Thomas T. Rodney, and bore him four children : Thomas Jefferson, Mary, Martin and Louis Rodney. Agatha Lorimier, daughter of the Commandant, married Daniel Steinback, and they had four children. The Rodneys, Pennys and Steinbacks were early settlers at Cape Girardeau. Their intercourse with the Lorimier family greatly increased their influence, and in their descendants' veins courses Indian blood, like many of the old Virginia families.

Charlotte Lorimier, the first wife of the Commandant Lorimier, being a Canadian and Chawanon princess, of Indian half-blood, was of medium height, had hair as dark as a raven's wing ; a woman of beautiful form, and of a voluptuous beauty, though fond of ornaments in her apparel and dress, was exceedingly neat and orderly. Her instincts and love were for the Indians, and she always sought their friendship and companionship, generally partook of their innocent sports and amusements. She died March 23d, 1808, and was buried in Cape Girardeau Cemetery, aged fifty years and two months. Upon her tombstone was inscribed the following :



THE CEDAR PYRAMID.





To the memory of Charlotte P. B. Lorimier, consort of Major Louis Lorimier, who departed this 23d March, 1808, leaving four sons and two daughters.

Vixit Cahokiæ proeses dignissima gentis  
Et decus indigenum quam lapis iste tegit  
Illa bonum didicit natura nassa magistra  
Et, duce natura, sponte sicuta bonum est  
Talis, honas memorum, nulle cultore quotanis  
Maturat fructus mitis oleva suos.

[TRANSLATED.]

She dwelt at Cahokia the most exalted princess of her tribe,  
By birth and natural gifts, and this slab covers her remains.  
Nature was her only mistress  
And taught her knowledge of good.  
She was like the fruitful olive tree, that yearly  
Without cultivation brings its fruits to maturity.

Commandant Lorimier's second wife was Mary Bethune, being a French Delaware of the half-blood, who bore him two children, who both died in infancy. After the death of Lorimier, she married one Doctor John Logan, of Illinois. She had the reputation of being an intelligent and handsome woman. This Doctor John Logan afterwards married Miss Jenkins, sister of Governor Jenkins, of Illinois, who had a son named John A. Logan, who was a senator from Illinois, in the Senate of the United States.

There is a tradition and romance, related in early times of Upper Louisiana of Commandant Lorimier and Captain Samuel Bradley, the great Indian fighter of the Indian Territory, which seems to have some foundation in fact. About

three miles from Cape Girardeau there is a Spanish grant in the name of Captain Samuel Bradley, for reasons made as follows :

During the French and English war, Lorimier whilst acting as an officer, at Detroit, had a skirmish with the English under Captain Bradley, in which the French were worsted, and driven to their block-house. Just as Lorimier jumped in this fort, through a port-hole, Captain Bradley caught him by the leg, when Lorimier cut his own straps, and by a sudden kick succeeded in recovering his leg minus his leggins and moccasins which were left as trophies in the hands of Captain Bradley. Years afterwards, when Lorimier had become a big Spanish Don at the Cape, and Captain Bradley had likewise ascended to power and position at Vincennes, Indiana, the latter expressed to the former a willingness to return his leggins and moccasins, whereupon an invitation was extended to visit the Cape. Captain Bradley and a large retinue came, were received in high old style, glorious times, last ditch filled up, everybody drunk, and as a wind-up, a grant of land was made to Captain Bradley in commemoration of his visit.

#### DEATH OF COMMANDANT LORIMIER.

Don Louis Lorimier died at Cape Girardeau on the 26th June, 1812, being then sixty-four years of age. He was buried in the cemetery

given by him, and a plain sandstone marks his place of burial. It is inscribed as follows :

TO THE MEMORY OF MAJOR LOUIS LORIMIER.

A native of Canada, and first settler,  
And Commandant of the Post of Cape Girardeau,  
Under the Government of Spain,  
Who departed this life the 26th June, 1812,  
Aged sixty-four years and three months.

*Ossa habeant pacem tumulo cineresque sepulti  
Immortali animæ luciat alma dies.*

TRANSLATION.

Peace to his bones and his ashes, buried in the tomb.  
May the radiant light of the eternal day  
Illuminate his immortal soul.

### CIVIL AND MILITARY JURISDICTION.

There was always important business before the commandants of the Spanish posts, both civil and military, and business was dispatched without technicalities of law and with convenience and without delay. As an instance of the criminal code, here is the order and decision of Commandant Lorimier in the case of Robert Pulliam, on charge of larceny :

“ He is condemned to receive thirty lashes on his bare back, and to pay the expenses incurred by this prosecution, and to return the articles stolen : and said John Pulliam is ordered to depart from said district without further delay, and

to appear no more therein, else he shall be liable to receive five hundred lashes."

BERTHELMY COUSIN, THE LINGUIST AND SCIENTIFIC MAN OF THE WEST.

The Spanish Commandant, Lorimier, was fortunate during his administration to have such a compeer and friend for his secretary and interpreter, as the talented Berthelmy Cousin. This remarkable man was the son of Marin Cousin of the parish of Gréville, on the coast of Manche, or the English Channel, three leagues westward of Cherbourg, in France. Berthelmy Cousin was born on the 28th March, 1767. He left his home in France in 1791, for the West Indies. From there he crossed over to America, and finally located himself at Cape Girardeau. Cousin was of small stature, but strong and athletic, and became known as the "Little Frenchman." He became interpreter and secretary of the post of Cape Girardeau, during the Spanish régime in Upper Louisiana.

Cousin was a man of remarkable talents and of various accomplishments, being a linguist, spoke well the Spanish, French, English and German languages; and was conversant with the Indian dialects. He was well acquainted with the Spanish and French code, and perfectly conversant

with legal papers. Owing to his services to the Spanish officers he was rewarded by Spain with valuable grants of land.

Cousin was also a person of considerable erudition, and very proficient in mathematics and the physical sciences. He became an accomplished surveyor, and in that capacity was a great benefit to the old inhabitants of Upper Louisiana. In that occupation he made a valuable friend of Antoine Soulard, the old surveyor of St. Louis. As a mark of friendship, Cousin, by his will left him his valuable instruments. Few men who settled in early times in the great West possessed greater talents and scholarly attainments than Cousin. He had a comprehensive mind and generous impulses. Judge Robert Wilson of Cape Girardeau well remarked that Cousin "was what would be a valuable man anywhere, and at any time."

#### POPULATION.

The census of 1799, under Spanish authority, shows that Cape Girardeau district contained five hundred and twenty-one persons, and that at the change of government in 1804 it had increased to one thousand two hundred and six persons.

CITY OF CAPE GIRARDEAU.

The city of Cape Girardeau was first laid out as a regular town in the year 1805, and was first incorporated in the year 1824 and again in 1843. This city is now, in 1886, much improved in business; and has good streets, and wharf, with railroad connection, with school houses, college, and convent, and several churches; also with a normal school supported by the State of Missouri, whilst its population has reached five thousand.

## IV—ST. CHARLES DISTRICT.

### ST. CHARLES DISTRICT UNDER THE SPANIARDS, 1769.

This district under the Spaniards was bounded east by the Mississippi river, south by the Missouri river, north and west undefined. It embraced an immense territory, unsurpassed in climate and fertility of soil, bounded by magnificent rivers, with rolling prairies covered with beautiful flowers, with its great and wonderful forests. Its population as recorded by the Spaniards in 1799 was eight hundred and seventy-five persons, and in 1804, under the United States, was fourteen hundred whites and one hundred and fifty slaves. During this period, the town of St. Charles was founded by Blanchette surnamed the "Le Chasseur," in 1769. Its early inhabitants were Canadians and creoles. This town was located on the north bank of the Missouri river, about twenty-four miles above its mouth. It had originally but one street, fronting on the river, which extended about one mile, and which in 1804 was lined with about one hundred houses.

Subsequently to the establishment of St. Charles the village of "Portage des Sioux" was settled and located by François Saussier on the

banks of the Mississippi river, seven miles above the mouth of the Missouri, on an immense prairie bottom. Its population in 1804 comprised about twenty-four families.

A WONDERFUL PAINTING ON THE HIGH BLUFFS  
OF ILLINOIS FROM 1673 TO 1866.

OPPOSITE the St. Charles District there existed as early as 1673 on the rock bluffs of Illinois, on the Mississippi river above the city of Alton, a remarkably large, heinous painting, which was seen first by Marquette and Joliet, and still existed as late as 1866. It was painted on the bluffs about twenty feet below the top of the cliff, and about sixty feet above its base. It represented a hideous monster, being well executed and painted in bold colors, which stood the test of time until destroyed by the hand of the "white man." This wonderful painting was known by the Indians as a monster called "Piesa," and was held by them in great fear and horror. Nor did they pass by it up and down the river without discharging their arrows and guns upon it. This hideous picture seemed apparently inaccessible to man, and it stood as a monument of the past to the glory of a people unknown to-day. By whom painted, and why, is buried in that gulf of the past. The writer of this saw it in 1837, whilst traveling on board of the steamer Vandalia.



Marquette states, in his publication of same in Paris in 1681: "Passing the mouth of the Illinois we soon fell into the shadow of a tall promontory, and with great astonishment beheld the representation of two monsters painted on its lofty limestone front. Each of these frightful figures had the face of a man, the horns of a deer, the beard of a tiger, and the tail of a fish so long that it passed around the body, over the head and between the legs. It was an object of Indian worship, and greatly impressed me with the necessity of substituting for this monstrous idolatry the true God."

Reverend Walter H. Hill, in "Sketches of St. Louis," states that Father De Smet related that he heard an aged chief of the Pottawattomies at Council Bluffs in 1838 give the history about this painting:

The Piasa, as the chief explained, being the bird that devoured men. An island not far from Alton still bears the name Piasa, and according to the chief it was a favorite haunt of this bird. He went on to tell how "many thousand moons before the arrival of the white man, when the great mammoth that was slain by Nanabush still roamed over the wild grassy plains, there existed a very large bird that could seize and carry off a full-grown deer in his talons as easily as a hawk could take up a wren. It once pounced on an Indian brave, bore him off to a deep cavern under the neighboring cliffs and there devoured him,

From that time forth it would feed on none but human flesh. In its voracity it depopulated whole villages of Illinois, nor could hundreds of stout warriors destroy it. At length a bold chief named Outaga, of great fame, was commanded by the great Manitou, who appeared to him in a dream, to single out twenty warriors, with bows and poisoned arrows, and by them the hungry Piasa should be slain.

They found the huge bird perched on a high rock that still bears his name and figure. All aimed their arrows at once and the fearful bird, transfixed with twenty arrows, fell dead near the feet of the brave chief Outaga. And to this day in the dark cavern near the Rock Piasa, are heaped the bones of many thousand Indians, whose flesh was food for the insatiable maw of this winged monster.

#### LES MAMELLES.

Near St. Charles originally stood two mounds, of regular surface, without trees or shrubs, but covered with grass, which were named by the French "Les Mamelles;" they had an elevation of about one hundred and fifty feet, they presented from their summit a most beautiful and grand view of the surrounding country.

### THE CEDAR PYRAMID.

We reproduce the picture and description by B. A. Alderson, Esq., of the Cedar Pyramid of St. Charles county, as it stood years ago :

Among the natural curiosities of our country, there is to be seen in Darst's Bottom, on the Missouri river, St. Charles county, Missouri, near the base of a rock cliff, which is perpendicular and two hundred feet in height, a column which shoots up to the height of about one hundred and sixty feet! This vast column erected by the great Architect of the Universe—as a specimen of durability and grandeur, stands firmly as the everlasting hills!

Its figure is that of the frustum of a pyramid—or more strictly speaking an obelisk—whose base is a rectangular parallelogram, and the mean of its sides twenty-eight by sixteen feet. This measure was made at the apex of the debris from the main cliff, which is about half the height of the column. At this height, the space between the column and the face of the cliff, is four feet; and at the apex of the column, the distance is apparently ten or twelve feet. The cliff, and sides of this column which faces it are straight and smooth, leaving no indication that this elevated shaft was ever united to the main cliff. The material of each is a grey friable sandstone.

On the face and summit of the cliff are numer-

ous cedars ; and upon the summit, there stands a living cedar fifteen or twenty feet in height ! And a dead cedar stump, four or five feet in height with sprigs of grass about its roots. The summit is, apparently, ten or twelve feet square.

From this spot, the intervening forest prevents a view of the Missouri river. In many places there is no accumulation of debris from the cliffs, and we see evident indications that the Missouri river, at some anterior period, rolled past,—and washed the base of the Cedar Pyramid.

The impression, which such scenes make upon the memory, together with recollections of our earlier history are calculated to excite a love of country. These rocks and hills of our native land ; our lofty ranges, our mountain brooks ; our lengthy rivers and expanded lakes ; the brilliant feats achieved under our stars and stripes ; the darings and virtues of our ancestors ; aye, the very hearth-stones which we encircled in the days of our childhood ; the old log school house and the village church—scenes like these engraved upon the tablets of memory, never to be erased, press upon the mind, and involuntary, but fervent aspirations flow out from our bosoms for the perpetuity of the hope of the world—our beloved and glorious Union.

The witnessing of such scenes, and the indulgence of such feelings, are also calculated to inspire one's soul with morality and reverence.

For, to one whose home is on the wide spreading prairie—whose wanderings are by the limpid stream and over rugged cliffs :—this mighty shaft, rising up by the side of craggy rocks, crowned with ever living verdure, may be likened to the kindlier feelings of the human heart, which rise up in adoration to “ Him, who doeth all things well ”—and form an Oasis in the garden of the heart.

### CÔTE SANS DESSEIN.

During the Spanish régime, this village was founded by Frenchmen, being located on the Mississippi river near the mouth of the Osage river. Near this village, was an immense rock, rising about sixty feet, in the alluvial bottom, which was left by a freak of nature solitary and alone.

The post of Côte Sans Dessein, was in early times attacked by a large band of savages, and was defended in a block-house, by two men and two women. The Indians assaulted this place of retreat in every ferocious way, and repeatedly set it on fire, which was put out by the courage of these two brave women. The defense was made principally by the brave and gallant Baptiste Louis Roy, a hunter and mountaineer, who was assisted greatly by his noble and brave wife. The result was the death of one person in the block-house, whilst fourteen savages were killed and

many wounded. The *Gazetteer* says, that "when the band of Indians were defeated, before leaving they collected a dozen small kettles, and having broken them to pieces, piled them around a large unbroken one, as a sign to the savages, who might follow in their trail, that one man had slain many Redskins." Baptiste Louis Roy was a tall, robust and fine looking man, being a hunter and mountaineer, who had witnessed, and gone through, some most exciting and stirring scenes amongst the Indians in the far West and the Rocky Mountains.

For his heroic defense, the mountaineers presented Roy with a beautiful rifle, and a silver vase, but owing to the last present wounding the feelings of his wife, he refused in a bold and manly way, to accept these presents. This noble and brave man, lived to an old age, and died on his homestead, near the city of St. Joseph, leaving but few children, who have all departed this life. A braver man never handled a western rifle.

#### DANIEL BOONE.

This great explorer, hunter and pioneer of Kentucky, settled in the year 1795 at "Femme Osage District," in the then St. Charles District. When asked why he left Kentucky, he said, "Too much crowded, too crowded, I want elbow room."

Whilst in St. Louis, the Lieutenant-Governor of Louisiana gave him a hearty welcome, and granted him 8,500 arpents of land on the north side of the Missouri river, in the then St. Charles Spanish District, upon which he built a log cabin.

Boone, under Spanish authority, was made Civil and Military Commandant of the "Femme Osage District" on July 11, 1797. In that capacity he gave general satisfaction to the French inhabitants and American pioneers of Upper Louisiana.

The grant of land given to him by the Spanish officer at St. Louis, he neglected to have confirmed by the Spanish authority, at New Orleans, which claim was not made valid by the act of the Land Commissioner under the United States. This was quite a misfortune for Boone, when deprived of his lands in Kentucky and Missouri. Afterwards the Government of the United States granted him only 850 acres in the Boone's Lick country.

Boone, as early as 1804 to 1808, became famous as a hunter in what is known as the Boone's Lick country, where he discovered valuable salt springs. His reputation at this time, was very great, as an explorer of the wilderness, and as an Indian fighter, amongst the pioneers of the Great West.

Boone died at the residence of his son on September 26, 1820, in the "Femme Osage District," now St. Charles county, Missouri. His remains

were buried alongside of his wife, near Marthasville, Warren county, Missouri. Their grave was marked by a rough slab of limestone, with a plain inscription. After slumbering a quarter of a century on Missouri soil, his body was removed to Frankfort, Kentucky, on September 13, 1845, by the State of Kentucky, where great respect and honors was paid to his remains and memory by that commonwealth and the people, whilst his grave was strewed with flowers, which homage was due to so remarkable a man.



V. —NEW MADRID DISTRICT.

FROM 1769 TO 1804.

---

THIS Spanish district originally was bounded on the north by the Tawappata Bottom, east by the Mississippi river, south by the Arkansas, west by an undefined boundary. This district fronting the Mississippi consisted of low, level, alluvion, and rich bottom lands, interspersed with large lakes, occasionally with some overflowed ground. It was traversed by beautiful streams and rivers, such as the St. Francis, White, Castor, Big Black and others, with their tributaries. This region of country was dotted with beautiful prairies, fringed by a magnificent forest, abounding with wild fruits. Over this territory roamed in great numbers the buffalo, elk, bear, deer, and other wild animals, whilst it swarmed with the wild turkey, swans, geese, ducks and numerous fowls in great varieties. At this early period under the Spanish regime, it was inhabited by the Delawares, Shawnees, Creeks and Cherokee Indians, hunters, vagabonds, trappers and voyageurs.

Strange as it may appear, long before this, as early as 1541, fifty years after the discovery of America, De Soto, with his Spanish cavaliers,

visited this district in search of gold and silver. Being disappointed in this, they abandoned their project and retraced their steps to Florida.

We give the following history of New Madrid, as related by Garcilago de la Vega, a Spanish chronicler :

“ It was in 1541, when De Soto and his companions crossed the “ Big Swamp,” and unfurling the great banner of Spain, entered the capital of Capaha amid salvos of artillery and the shouts of the warriors of Casquin. As many of our readers are not familiar with this portion of the history, we may say that if we are to believe the narrative of the veracious Garcilago de la Vega, himself a descendant of the Incas, De Soto, after he crossed the Mississippi and broke up his boats to preserve the nails, marched through the wilderness until he descried a large village containing about four hundred houses. It was seated on the banks of the river, the borders of which, as far as the eye could reach, were covered with luxuriant fields of maize, interspersed with groves of fruit trees. This was one of the villages of the Cacique of Casquin. Here the Spaniards rested for six days, and then resuming their journey they marched through a populous campaign country, where the land was more elevated and the soil less alluvial than any they had yet seen on the borders of the Mississippi. The fields were overflowingly beautiful, the pecan nut,

the red and gray plum and mulberry trees grew there in abundance. In two days they came to the chief town, where the Cacique resided. It was seated on the same side of the river, about seven leagues above, and in a very fertile and populous country. Here they were well received by the Cacique, who made him (De Soto) presents of mantles, skins and fish, and invited De Soto to lodge in his habitation. It stood on a high, artificial hill.

“ The region thus described evidently refers to the chain of hill-land extending from Little Prairie in Pemiscot county to New Madrid. After remaining at this place some time, the Cacique implored De Soto as follows: ‘ We supplicate you to pray to your God to send us rain, for our fields are parched for the want of water.’ De Soto ordered a large cross to be framed and erected it on a high hill on the banks of the river and which served the Indians as a watch-tower, overlooking every eminence in the vicinity. After everything was prepared a solemn procession was formed, the Cacique walked beside De Soto, and the savage warriors mingled with the Spaniards, whilst the priests chanted the litany and the soldiers responded. Thousands of savages assembled to witness the imposing ceremonies and watched the Spaniards. Ever and anon they raised their eyes to heaven and made signs with their faces and hands as if asking God to listen to the Christians’ prayers. De Soto and his

followers were moved to tenderness to behold, in a strange and heathen land, savage people worshiping with such deep humility and tears the emblem of our redemption. God, in His mercy, says the Spanish chronicler, willing to show these heathen that He listens unto those who call upon Him in truth, sent down in the middle of the ensuing night a plenteous rain, to the great joy of the Indians.

“After remaining at Casquin ten days De Soto gave orders to march. The Cacique of Casquin obtained permission to accompany him with his warriors. His object was to wreak his vengeance on the neighboring Cacique of Capaha. A war had existed between them for several generations. The march from Casquin to Capaha is fully described, and after marching three days they came to a great swamp, miry on the borders, with a lake in the center, too deep to be forded, and which formed a kind of gulf on the Mississippi, into which it emptied itself.” Across this piece of water the Indians of Casquin constructed a rude bridge of trunks of trees. This swamp, and which is the “Big Swamp,” separated Casquin and Capaha. It required one day to cross this swamp. The next day De Soto marched to Capaha and took possession of the place. The inhabitants had all fled to an island in the river, and the warriors of Casquin ravaged the territory.

“De Soto sent envoys to Capaha with proffers

of friendship, which were indignantly rejected. Then the Spaniards and their allies resolved to attack them, and accordingly invaded the island. Owing, however, to the pusillanimity of their allies the Spaniards were compelled to retreat to their canoes. But for the forbearance of Capaha the soldiers of De Soto would have been overwhelmed. On the next day, Capaha sent four of his principal warriors as an embassy to De Soto. They came with great ceremony; bowed to the sun and moon and then to De Soto, but took no notice of Casquin. They were received with great affability and went away well pleased with their reception. On the next day, the Cacique of Capaha, attended by a train of a hundred warriors, covered with beautiful plumes, and with mantles of all kinds of skins, came to see De Soto. Capaha was about twenty-six years old, of noble form and princely demeanor. He was received by De Soto as a friend. De Soto remained for some time at Capaha. He sent some of his followers to search for gold and silver further north."

#### NEW MADRID UNDER THE SPANIARDS IN 1769.

The Territory of New Madrid, at this period, became subject to Spain, a region of country of great beauty, fertility and resources, equal in productiveness to the Nile of Egypt. Its remarkable

richness of soil and its hunting-grounds, gave it the name of "L'Anse à la Graisse" (Cove of Fat.)

The town of New Madrid was laid out in 1787, on a very large scale—to eclipse even the city of Madrid, in Spain—by Colonel George Morgan, of New Jersey, formerly an American officer, who acquired a large concession of land for that purpose from the Spanish officers at New Orleans. After inducing some fifty emigrants to settle at New Madrid, charges were made against Morgan, by General James Wilkinson, during his intrigues with Spain, and by others, which induced Governor Miro to cancel the concessions of land to Morgan, denouncing the whole project, by his letter of May 29th, 1789, to Morgan; and that Spain would establish a fort at New Madrid, and that a detachment of Spanish soldiers would guard there the interests of Spain. Colonel Morgan, stripped of his large concessions and power, returned to the United States, much disappointed at the failure of his great project.

#### SPANISH COMMANDANTS.

Soon after this, New Madrid was made a Spanish post, and Don Fouché was made its Spanish commandant in the year 1789. Owing to its mixed population then, he established a fort named "Fort Céleste." Don Fouché promul-

gated the laws of Spain, regulated the land necessary for the town and its inhabitants, and brought order out of chaos.

He was succeeded in office by Don Thomas Portell, a Spaniard, in 1791, who held this position for five years, or until December, 1796.

Don Pierre A. Laforge, notary public, states that "Don Portell was a man of distinguished merit, equally in the military as in the cabinet, was superior to his position, and if he failed, it was because he did not place himself on a level with the sort of people he had to govern."

The principal population, at the time, consisted of Indians, traders, hunters and boatmen, and a few enterprising emigrants. Unfortunately for the prosperity of New Madrid, the great amount of game in the country made its settlers neglect the cultivation of its rich lands.

During the command of Don Portell, five Spanish galleys, arrived from New Orleans, for the protection of the post and to protect the navigation of the Mississippi; they were detained there a whole summer, but owing to the want of corn and flour, the commandant of New Madrid post, had to order it from Kentucky and the "Illinois." After this, a few French and American families, turned their serious attention to agriculture.

Don Portell was succeeded in office by Don Carlos Dehault Delassus, who served in that capacity from December, 1796 to August, 1799. Don Delassus was an active and good com-

mandant, and gave general satisfaction during his administration, and left New Madrid to act at St. Louis as Lieutenant-Governor of Upper Louisiana.

Don Henri Peroux, in August, 1799, became commandant of the post at New Madrid, when its population had then reached 782 persons, and served in this capacity until 1804. During this time, there existed roving vagabond Indians, who committed great barbarities in killing, stealing, and burning houses, from the Merrimac river to New Madrid. In 1802 an inhabitant at New Madrid, named David Trotter, having been killed and his house burnt, whilst other atrocities were continually taking place in Upper Louisiana, Lieutenant-Governor Delassus was compelled to organize the Spanish militia into service in December 1802. The companies organized were the following :

One company from St. Genevieve commanded by Captain Don Francis Vallé.

One company from Cape Girardeau commanded by Captain Don Louis Lorimier.

One company from New Bourbon commanded by Captain Don Camille Delassus.

One company from New Madrid commanded by Captain Don Henri Peroux.

“This militia was ordered to meet at the Post of New Madrid, where Lieutenant-Governor Don Carlos Dehault Delassus took command. These several commanders, arrested several savages,





DANIEL BOONE.



and held them as prisoners. They were mostly of the Maschow nation, called Tallaposa Creeks. A military council was held at New Madrid Fort, where the principal Indian criminal, Tewanayé, was condemned and put to death in the presence of the Spanish militia, and in presence of Indian chiefs and Indians."

#### LITTLE PRAIRIE.

During Peroux's command at New Madrid, the village of Little Prairie was established by Captain Francis Lessieur, a Canadian, who took command of this village, which was settled by Canadians and Creoles, with pioneers from Kentucky and Virginia, and became a flourishing village, being thirty miles below New Madrid.

During the Spanish régime at New Madrid, many prominent men settled there; amongst them were Pierre A. Laforge, John Lavalle and Dr. Richard Waters, who acted in different official capacities. Hon. William S. Moseby says that "They were men of considerable energy, generally highly educated, easy in circumstances, endowed with good sense, affable in manners, and soon acquired great influence in the community, and became leading spirits of the infant colony."

UNITED STATES GOVERNMENT—1804.

The United States, by treaty with France, took possession of New Madrid District in 1804. Its population then was thirteen hundred and fifty (1,350) including 150 slaves, about 400 capable of bearing arms. This district under the American flag, was improving rapidly in population and wealth, when it met with one of the most disastrous occurrences, being the terrible earthquakes of 1811-1812, which caused its inhabitants suddenly to abandon the country and their homes.

We give the following description of the New Madrid earthquakes of 1811-12, by the Hon. Lewis F. Linn, the model Senator of Missouri, written in February, 1836,—and a description of New Madrid, at this period :

“ The memorable earthquake of December, 1811, after shaking the valley of the Mississippi to its center, vibrated along the courses of the rivers and valleys, and, passing the primitive mountain barriers, died away along the shores of the Atlantic ocean. In the region now under consideration, during the continuance of so appalling a phenomenon, which commenced by distant rumbling sounds, succeeded by discharges as if a thousand pieces of artillery were suddenly exploded, the earth rocked *to and fro*, and vast chasms opened, from whence issued columns of water, sand, and coal, accompanied by

hissing sounds, caused, perhaps, by the escape of pent-up steam, while ever and anon flashes of electricity gleamed through the troubled clouds of night, rendering the darkness doubly horrible. The current of the Mississippi, pending this elemental strife, was driven back upon its source with the greatest velocity for several hours, in consequence of an elevation of its bed. But this noble river was not thus to be stayed in its course. Its accumulated waters came booming on, and, o'ertopping the barrier thus suddenly raised, carried everything before them with resistless power. Boats, then floating on its surface, shot down the declivity like an arrow from a bow, amid roaring billows and the wildest commotion. A few days' action of its powerful current sufficed to wear away every vestige of the barrier thus strangely interposed, and its waters moved on in their wonted channel to the ocean. The day that succeeded this night of terror brought no solace in its dawn. Shock followed shock ; a dense black cloud of vapor overshadowed the land, through which no struggling sunbeam found its way to cheer the desponding heart of man, who, in silent communion with himself, was compelled to acknowledge his weakness and dependence on the everlasting God. The appearances that presented themselves after the subsidence of the principal commotion were such as strongly support an opinion heretofore advanced. Hills had disappeared, and lakes were found in their stead ; and

numerous lakes became elevated ground, over the surface of which vast heaps of sand were scattered in every direction, while in many places the earth for miles was sunk below the general level of the surrounding country, without being covered with water, leaving an *impression in miniature of a catastrophe much more important in its effects, which had, perhaps, preceded it ages before.*

“ One of the lakes formed on this occasion is sixty or seventy miles in length, and from three to twenty miles in breadth. It is in some places very shallow ; in others from fifty to one hundred feet deep, which is much more than the depth of the Mississippi river in that quarter. In sailing over its surface in the light canoe, the voyager is struck with astonishment at beholding the giant trees of the forest standing partially exposed amid a waste of waters, branchless and leafless. But the wonder is still further increased on casting the eye on the dark-blue profound, to observe canebrakes covering its bottom, over which a mammoth species of testudo is occasionally seen dragging his slow length along, while countless myriads of fish are sporting through the aquatic thickets. But, if God in His wrath has passed over this devoted land ; if He touched the mountains and they disappeared in the abyss, his beneficent influence is still felt in its soft climate, the unexampled fertility of its soil, the deep verdure of its forests, and choicest offerings of Flora. The lost

hills or islands before mentioned are of various dimensions ; some twenty or thirty miles in circumference, others not so large, and some are even diminutive in size, but of great altitude, occasionally furnished with fountains of living waters, and all well timbered. The low grounds are in the form of basins, connected by sinuses, which not being as deep as the bottom of their reservoirs, so that when an inundation takes place, either from the Mississippi river or streams issuing from the surrounding highlands, they are filled to overflowing ; and when the waters recede below a level with these *points* of communication, they become stagnant pools, passing off by the process of infiltration which is very slow, in a thick, black, tenacious loam, or by evaporation equally gradual, in a country covered by forests and impenetrable jungle. An interesting question now presents itself, certainly one deeply interesting to the people of Missouri and Arkansas. What can be done to render this extraordinary country a fit habitation for man ? In its present condition it is nearly useless, affording winter pasturage for some herds of cattle belonging to farmers on its borders, and a safe cover to bands of wild savage animals, on the destruction of which a few hunters gain a precarious existence, amid noisome exhalations and venomous reptiles. The government of the United States, lord over millions upon millions of acres of land, possessing every advantage, will not, in all prob-

ability, for ages to come, incur a heavy expense for the purpose of reclaiming this country from its present deplorable condition, unless commensurate good could be effected. There will be no difficulty in finding motives in the cupidity or interest of Congress (if in no better motive) to make a liberal appropriation for this object.

“ By clearing the St. François of its rafts, a much larger volume of water will flow in its channel, which is now spread over the country, to be again returned by in its osculating branches ; which concentration of its water would, from year to year, augment its depth at places where the rafts existed, which, with deepening the points of communication between the lakes and bayous, so as to permit a continual current to flow onward to the Mississippi or St. François, would reclaim a million or two acres of land, surpassing in fertility the famous borders of the Nile. To those who have never visited the far West, the great basin is rich beyond conception ; and in the autumnal season, when teeming with the rankest vegetable productions, in an active state of decomposition, its liberated miasma, borne on the wings of the wind, have a most deleterious influence on the health of those who reside in the contiguous counties, furnishing an additional argument for using exertions to reclaim it.”

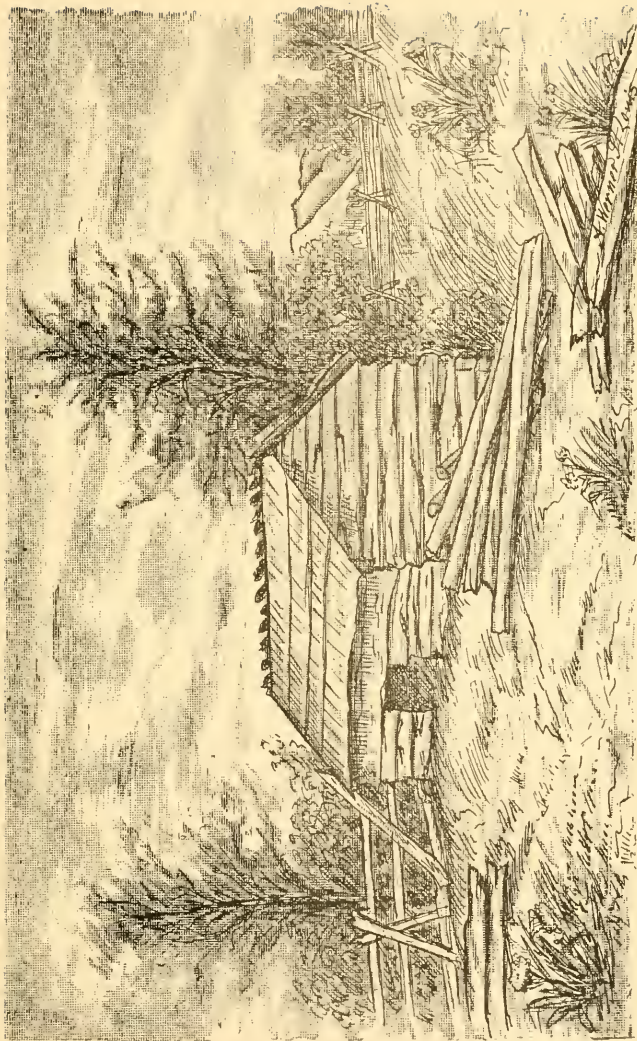


We here give a picture and part of description of these earthquakes by Henry Howe of the *Great West* :

“ There were a number of severe shocks, but two series of concussions were particularly terrible, far more so than the rest. The shocks were clearly distinguishable into two classes : those in which the motion was horizontal, and those in which it was perpendicular. The latter were attended with explosions, and the terrible mixture of noises that preceded and accompanied the earthquakes in a louder degree, but were by no means so desolating and destructive as the other. Then the houses crumbled, the trees waved together, the ground sunk ; while ever and anon vivid flashes of lightning gleaming through the troubled clouds of night, rendered the darkness doubly horrible. After the severest shocks, a dense black cloud of vapour overshadowed the land, through which no struggling sunbeam found its way to cheer the heart of man. The sulphuretted gases that were discharged during the shocks tainted the air with their noxious effluvia, and so impregnated the water of the river for one hundred and fifty miles, as to render it unfit for use.”

Godfrey Lesieur, an intelligent and remarkable man residing at New Madrid, witnessed these earthquakes, and gives the following account :

“ The first shock was at about 2 o'clock A. M., on the night of December 16, 1811, and was very hard, shaking down log houses, chimneys, &c. It was followed at short intervals, half to one hour apart, by comparatively slight shocks, until about 7 o'clock in the morning, a rumbling noise was heard in the west, resembling and not unlike distant thunder, and in an instant the earth began to shake and totter to such a degree that no persons were able to stand or walk. This lasted perhaps one minute. At this juncture the earth was observed to be as it were rolling in waves of a few feet in height, with a visible depression between. By and by those swells or waves were seen to burst, throwing upwards large volumes of water, sand, and a species of charcoal, some of which were covered, in part, with a substance, which, by its peculiar odor, was thought to be sulphur. When these swells bursted, large, wide and long fissures were left, running north and south parallel with each other for miles. I have seen some that were four or five miles in length, and, on an average, about four feet deep and ten feet or less wide. The rumbling noise before mentioned, the waves, etc., appeared to come from the west, and traveled, as it seemed, eastward. After this, slight shocks, varying in severity, were, at intervals, felt until the 7th of January, 1812, when the country was again visited by another earthquake, equally as violent as the two first, and characterized by the same frightful



DANIEL BOONE'S CABIN IN MISSOURI.



results. Then it was that the cry arose among the people "*sauve qui peut*" (save who can), and all but two families left the country, leaving all their property, consisting of cattle, hogs, horses, and portions of their household effects. These proved a total loss in the end, because itinerant adventurers from other parts, aided by some others, actuated from motives of cupidity, it was said, carried away in flatboats to Natchez and New Orleans all the stock save what they did not slaughter. I omitted to mention that after the terrible shock of the 7th of January, slight ones from time to time were felt. This lasted until the 17th of February, when another very severe one, having the same effects as the others, visited the country and caused great injury to the land, in forming more extensive fissures, sinking high land and forming it into lakes, making deep lakes high land.

"Many of these are now under cultivation, and have proven to be the richest and most productive lands in Southeast Missouri. The damaged and torn-up portion was not very extensive, embracing a circumference of not more than one hundred and fifty miles, taking the old town of Little Prairie, now called Caruthersville, as the center. A very large extent of country on either side of the White Water, called here Little river, also on both sides of the St. Francis river in this State and Arkansas, also on the Reelfoot bayou, in Tennessee, was sunk below the for-

mer elevation about ten feet, thus rendering that region of country entirely unfit for cultivation.

“It is a remarkable fact, and worthy of notice, that so few casualties occurred during those terrible convulsions. Among the citizens there were but two deaths, both victims being women. One, Mrs. Lafont, died from fright, while the earth was shaking and rocking. The other, Mrs. Jarvis, received an injury from the fall of a cabin log, from which she died a few days after. Not so fortunate were flat-boat men, many of whom must have perished, judging from the number of débris seen floating, and from the river being partly covered with freight, such as barrels of flour, pork, whiskey and other products.

“A man, whose name I have forgotten, who was moving from Tennessee with his family, a wife and seven children, and a young married man to help on the flatboat, to Arkansas, were all lost but himself. He saved his life on a plank after the boat capsized, but the whole of his family were drowned. A man named Glasscock, and family, six or eight in number, were all lost at Island No. 16. The boat on which he was moving, it is supposed, was also capsized.”

In the month of February, 1815, by representations made to Congress through Colonel Rufus Easton, then delegate from Missouri territory, an

act was passed by that body for the relief of sufferers by earthquakes in New Madrid county, which act was approved February 17th. At that time all mail facilities had been stopped to this county on account of the terrible ravages of said earthquakes. Consequently all news from Washington was slow in reaching this portion of the country. In a very few days after the passage of the law mentioned, it was known in St. Louis. This was sufficient to arouse and excite the cupidity of sharpers, which afforded them so promising an opportunity to make fortunes, and many of them did realize their most sanguine expectations. The whole country was flooded with those speculators before the people were informed of the relief act passed by Congress. The result growing out of so dishonest and unfair proceedings proved far more disastrous than had been experienced by the ravages of the earthquakes. In many instances whole sections of land were sold at from \$40 to \$60, and grants of a less quantity of acres were sold at about the same rates. Certificates of location were issued by the recorder of land titles at St. Louis in lieu of the injured claims, which were relinquished to the government. Those certificates were mostly located in what was then called "The Boonslick country," comprising now some of the most prosperous and rich counties in Missouri. The greater portion of those locations would readily have brought from ten to fifteen dollars per acre,

now worth probably fifty to one hundred dollars an acre. And mark—the claims sold as above indicated, were paid for in worthless, depreciated Missouri bank notes; the banks very soon failed, and thus the people were doubly swindled.

#### AUDUBON ABOUT THE EARTHQUAKES OF 1811-12.

At this period Audubon, the ornithologist, was traveling in Western Kentucky and reports the following :

“The western section of Kentucky, and the banks of the Mississippi suffered from a severe shock of earthquake.” What he heard he imagined to be the distant rumbling of a violent tornado.

“On which,” says he, “I spurred my steed, with a wish to gallop as fast as possible to a place of shelter. But it would not do; the animal knew better than I what was forthcoming, and instead of going faster, so nearly stopped that I remarked he placed one foot after another on the ground with as much precaution as if walking on a smooth sheet of ice. I thought he had suddenly foundered, and, speaking to him, was on point of dismounting and leading him, when he all of a sudden fell a-groaning piteously, hung his head, spread out his forelegs, as if to save himself from



falling, and stood stock still, continuing to groan. I thought my horse was about to die, and would have sprung from his back had a minute more elapsed; but at that instant all the shrubs and trees began to move from all their very roots, the ground rose and fell in successive furrows, like the ruffled waters of a lake, and I became bewildered in my ideas, as I too plainly discovered, that all this awful commotion was the result of an earthquake.

“I had never witnessed anything of the kind before, although like every person, I knew earthquakes by description. But what is description compared with reality! Who can tell the sensations which I experienced when I found myself rocking, as it were, upon my horse, and with him moving to and fro like a child in a cradle, with the most imminent danger around me. The fearful convulsion, however, lasted only a few minutes, and the heavens again brightened as quickly as they had become obscure; my horse brought his feet to the natural position, raised his head, and galloped off as if loose and frolicking without a rider.”

He further states that the earthquake produced serious consequences at New Madrid, and for some distance on the Mississippi, the earth was rent asunder in several places, one or two islands sunk forever, and the inhabitants who escaped fled in dismay towards the eastern shores.

## SUBMERGED LANDS OF MISSOURI.

The following Report on the Submerged Lands of the State of Missouri was presented by Firmin A. Rozier, as chairman of Submerged Lands of Missouri, to the famous convention presided over by John C. Calhoun, of South Carolina, held at Memphis, Tennessee, in November, 1845, and was adopted by that important convention. It shows the situation and overflowed lands in Missouri and Arkansas at that period, in the year 1845.

### REPORT ON THE SUBMERGED LANDS OF THE STATE OF MISSOURI.

“The deepest interest is felt by the inhabitants of the State of Missouri and the neighboring States to reclaim the submerged lands of the State of Missouri. The whole Union longs to see these immense tracts of land, which now lay desolate and unfit for cultivation, made to smile by the industrious hand of man. It is of the most vital importance to the West and South that the submerged lands should be drained and reclaimed, and rendered inhabitable. The portion of the State of Missouri inundated, comprises the counties of Cape Girardeau, Scott, Mississippi, Wayne, Dunklin and New Madrid. There is about 2,160

square miles which are low and swampy lands in the above counties. A great portion of the above counties is covered with water, and possesses an alluvial soil, the lands are low and marshy, interspersed by streams, rivers, lakes, swamps, bayous, bogs and marshes : although a part of the swamps is not submerged by water the whole year ; but the waters remaining stagnant on these low and marshy lands during the hot summer become very impure and putrid. The vegetation being very rank and abundant on this rich and marshy soil, mixes with the putrid waters, and when decomposed fills and renders the atmosphere impure and unhealthy, which adds greatly to disease ; and, as the waters are dried up from these swamps, there is a sediment, stench and poison left on them that causes disease and death, not only to those that live on their borders, but, likewise, to the inhabitants that live in the vicinity. A great portion of these swamps is not susceptible for the habitation of man, except a numberless group of Islands interspersed, which are occupied during certain seasons of the year by trappers and hunters. It is a remarkable fact, that there is a chain of low, level and marshy lands, commencing at the city of Cape Girardeau, in Missouri, and extending to the Gulf of Mexico ; and between these two points there is not a rock landing except at the small town of Commerce, on the west side of the Mississippi river : there, is furthermore, only one ridge of high land from

Commerce to be met with on the west side of said river, which is at Helena, in Arkansas. From the city of Cape Girardeau, running into the State of Arkansas, there is a strip or tongue, 350 miles long, of beautiful and excellent lands, along the western margin of the Mississippi, which is well inhabited, having an average of ten miles wide, and is entirely cut off, and stands isolated from the interior of Missouri and Arkansas, by the great swamps lying west of it, and deprives and cuts off all communication from the interior southern part of Missouri and northern part of Arkansas, for the distance above mentioned, to the Mississippi river. The inconvenience experienced and felt by the inhabitants west of these swamps in not being able to get the fruits of their labor to market, is very unprofitable and injurious to the commerce of the above mentioned States. The lands west of these swamps are very fertile and rich; the timber is unsurpassed in size and beauty. It is much to be regretted that all intercourse with this beautiful country, in the interior of Missouri and Arkansas, is thus cut off, producing incalculable injury in point of commerce and agriculture.

The earthquakes of 1811-12, proved very injurious and disastrous to the south of Missouri, and were felt far and wide. They changed the course of the streams and rivers, which occasioned the waters to spread in every direction, and made high land where it was low previous, and

in elevated places sunk them—thus causing the rivers and streams to overflow a great extent of country. These earthquakes of 1811-12, are still remembered by many of our oldest settlers; when the whole land was moved and waved like the waves of the sea, and the majestic oak bent his head to the ground like a weed, and the terrible fact that the waters of the mighty Mississippi, opposite to the town of New Madrid, rolled up stream for ten miles, carrying on its bosom barks, keel-boats and every species of crafts, with a rapidity unknown, and causing destruction of property and life.

The swamps commence below the city of Cape Girardeau and extend to Brown's farm six miles below Cape Girardeau. This is the head of White Water or Little River swamps, which are divided from St. John's swamps by a chain of high lands, in the shape of a horse-shoe, in Scott county. This high land is eighteen miles long and ten miles wide, and extends from Cape La creuse river to the town of Commerce, on the Mississippi river. Then from the town of Benton, which is on said chain of high lands, in Scott county, there is a tongue of land that extends to New Madrid, on which the large New Madrid road runs; the length of the road is thirty-eight miles, called King's Road. Established by the Spaniards, it starts from Cape Girardeau, passes Brown's farm, runs to Benton, to Halcap's farm, then to New Madrid. This King's Road runs on

a tongue of land three miles wide; and makes the line of division between the swamps of White Water or Little River on the west, and St. John's swamps on the east of said road. Let it be particularly remarked, that the waters that flow east of the said King's Road empty into St. John's swamps, and all the waters west of said road empty into White Water or Little River swamps.

There are four large swamps that originate in Missouri; that is to say, the White Water or Little River swamps, the St. John's swamps, the James' swamps, and the St. Francis swamps.

The White Water or Little River swamps commence below Cape Girardeau, and lie immediately west of said New Madrid road, except a small chain of it that extends along Cape La creuse river, which flows into the Mississippi, four miles below Cape Girardeau City, and are on the northern side of said chain of high hills that forms Horse Shoe, in Scott county: and then these swamps flow into New Madrid and Dunklin counties; then flowing into the State of Arkansas, and empty into St. Francis river, at a point west of Greenock in Crittenden county, in Arkansas. Their length in the State of Missouri, in a straight direction, is 103 miles, and 10 miles wide on an average, covering the counties of Cape Girardeau, Scott, Stoddard, Dunklin and New Madrid. These swamps are made by the overflow of the Mississippi river at their head, between the city of Cape Girardeau and the mouth

of Cape LaCreuse ; and by the lakes and streams on the west side of said swamps, and the Castor river, which empty said swamps of White Water or Little River.

“ The St. John's swamps commence below the town of Commerce, and at St. John's lake ; and it is well to suggest, that this said lake is filled with rich iron bog ore, a specimen of which can be seen in my possession ; and then the swamp continues to flow on the east side of New Madrid road, and empties itself into St. John's bayou, just at the town of New Madrid. These St. John's swamps are forty-five miles long and six miles wide. These swamps submerge the counties of Scott, Mississippi and New Madrid, and are formed by the waters of Lake St. John and the overflow of the Mississippi river.

“ The James' swamps lie between the St. John's swamps and the Mississippi river, which submerge the county of Mississippi, and empty into James' bayou, at the dividing line between New Madrid and Mississippi counties. The James' swamps are thirty miles long and ten miles wide ; between the swamps St. John's and James', are Mathews, East, and Long Prairies, which are good lands. The James' swamps are formed by the overflow of the Mississippi river.

“ The St. Francis swamps commence in Wayne county, fifteen miles below Greenville ; then dividing Stoddart and Wayne counties, and Dunklin in Missouri, and Green county in Arkansas ; and

then continue their course to a point west of Memphis, in Tennessee. The St. Francis swamps in Missouri are seventy-five miles long, and ten to twelve miles wide, and from the Missouri line, extend about seventy-five miles in Arkansas, in width, about twenty miles, and then lose themselves into the St. Francis river.

“ The amount of submerged lands in Missouri is 2,160 square miles, as far as it can be ascertained at the Land Office, making 1,328,400 acres. The reclaiming of these lands would afford sufficient remuneration to justify this vast undertaking. The lands are now valueless, and can never be made available without being drained and reclaimed. The proper manner of reclaiming these lands would be for the General Government to cede these submerged lands to the States, with the special condition enjoined upon the State of reclaiming them. The State would feel more interest in executing this work, for it would come under its immediate concern, and for the expense attending this work the State would be repaid by the sales of the reclaimed lands. The General Government can never dispose of these inundated lands, nor the fertile lands bordering on these swamps, without their being reclaimed, for no human being can inhabit on the borders of these lands without endangering his life. The voice of humanity speaks aloud, that these lands should be rendered fit for cultivation and for the habitation of man. Some of the best inhabitants of our



State, and old settlers of the country, live on the borders of these swamps. It is well known that they suffered much from the earthquakes of 1811 and 1812; and they braved many dangers in the last war, in the struggle with savages;—it is but just, generous and equitable, that the Government should render their and their children's situation comfortable and wholesome.

“ There exist strange and unknown diseases of the most dreadful and malignant character—dealing death in every direction, and spreading throughout the southern part of Missouri terror to its inhabitants. The poisonous winds blowing over swamps, seem to carry on their wings, death to the young, hardy, strong, infirm and old alike. These lands are now valueless. These low lands are susceptible of being reclaimed; if so, would be unsurpassed in richness of soil, excellence of timber, and would invite thousands of immigrants to inhabit them; and towns and villages would spring up in the whole country, and an active population would cover its whole extent,—the lands would be made to smile with rich harvests that would cover its surface—the south of Missouri would be one of the garden spots of the West; for its lands would be level and beautiful, and would be as fertile as any on the face of the globe.

“ All of which with the accompanying Map is respectfully submitted.

“I therefore propose the following resolution :

“*Resolved*, That in the opinion of this Convention—it is both the interest and duty of the General Government to cede the inundated lands to the States in which they lie, with the special condition to drain and reclaim them.”

“FIRMIN A. ROZIER, Chairman.”

#### THE TOWN OF NEW MADRID IN 1850.

Hon. William Mosely, in 1850, stated : “The encroachments of the Mississippi, have almost swept what was once New Madrid and Little Prairie. The old fort, the quaint old churches, their cemeteries, where the remains of the early fathers rested after the journey of life, all, all, lie beneath the turbid waters of the mad river ; in a few years more, there will scarcely be track or trace to point the stranger, where once stood New Madrid and Little Prairie.”

#### NEW TOWN OF MADRID.

When the constitution of Missouri was adopted in 1820, New Madrid was represented in that Convention by Hon. Robert D. Dawson and Christopher G. Houts, for at that period this new town was planned and laid out.

Out of the old Spanish district of New Madrid, many counties have been formed in the States of Arkansas and Missouri. This period of 1889, finds the old Spanish district, which is now intersected and spanned by different railroads, filling rapidly with a thriving and active population.

Such are the ways of Providence.

## PART VII.

### LOUISIANA TERRITORY.

MONETTE well remarks :

“The French nation had never approved the transfer of the Louisiana Territory to Spain in 1762. The loss of Louisiana had been viewed as the greatest calamity to the French nation, the result of an ignominious war, and a dishonorable peace under a weak government. Since the downfall of the Bourbon dynasty, the sympathies of Republican France had never lost sight of their estranged countrymen, subject, as they conceived, to foreign bondage on the Mississippi. Now the colossal power of France, under the genius of Napoleon, had made the crown heads of Europe tremble, and his edicts were supreme law to Southern Europe. Spain had become involved in the wars of Europe, and her monarch had been compelled to yield to the dictation of Napoleon, who had resolved to restore to the French empire, the ancient province of Louisiana, and thus to extend the dominion of France again upon the Mississippi.”

By the treaty of Ildefonso, October 1st, 1800, Spain retransferred to Napoleon Bonaparte, First Consul of the French Republic, all the Louisiana territory formerly owned by France in 1763, upon the condition, that the Duke of Parma should have the kingdom of Tuscany, with the title of "King of Etruria." The kingdom of Tuscany, with its rich revenues, was estimated at one hundred million of francs.

Napoleon was greatly elated by this acquisition, and made grand preparations, at this time, commensurate with the power of France, to take possession of Louisiana. He concentrated for this purpose, a large fleet in the ports of Holland; and a land force of twenty-five thousand soldiers, were ready to sail to the Mississippi, under the able commander Gen. Victor, but various disappointments and misfortunes prevented the contemplated departure of the fleet and troops. Napoleon becoming much embarrassed by his wars in Europe, whilst defeated and pressed by the English navy, determined to abandon his great project about the Louisiana Territory, and to dispose of it to the United States, for the purpose of crippling England's power, and to create her a rival on the seas and ocean.

Napoleon ordered the famous diplomatist, Talleyrand, and M. Marbois, Minister of Finances, to open negotiations with Robt. R. Livingston, then at Paris, Minister of the United States

to France. After mature consideration a treaty was entered April 30, 1803, with France, who transferred to the United States the Louisiana Territory for fifteen million dollars; also for sixty millions of francs to discharge France from claims due the citizens of the United States under the Convention of 1800; also to permit all vessels of Spain and France to enter free of charge for twelve years this said Territory of Louisiana.

This acquisition by the United States, was one of the most valuable and grandest, that ever fell to the lot of any nation, either modern or ancient. It was a territory that embraced every climate, and adapted to the cultivation of nearly every product in the world. This vast territory embraced 756,961,280 acres of land.

The "Province of Louisiana" was delivered December 20, 1803, at the City of New Orleans, by Mr. Laussat, the French colonial prefect, to Gov. William Claiborne, of Mississippi Territory and to Gen. James Wilkinson, commander of the army, both commissioners of the United States, amidst a large concourse of people. Governor Claiborne then became, and exercised the prerogatives and powers of Governor-General of the "Province of Louisiana," until Congress provided for it a regular form of government.

The total population of the "Louisiana Province," at this time, was ninety thousand eight hundred and forty persons.

By Act of Congress of March 26, 1804, this immense Territory was divided into two districts, the southern part was called "Orleans," and the northern part the "District of Louisiana," then known as "Upper Louisiana."

#### UPPER LOUISIANA.

The original boundary, under the French and Spaniards, was, east by the Mississippi river, south by "Hope Encampment," opposite the Chickasaw Bluffs, but main boundary by the Arkansas river, north and west indefinitely. This district was formally divided by the Spaniards in 1769, into five districts, viz: St. Genevieve, St. Louis, St. Charles, New Madrid and Cape Girardeau. The inhabitants of Upper Louisiana present a singular spectacle, in a short period of having passed and lived under three different governments: first under the French flag, secondly under Spanish dominion; and lastly under the banner of the United States.

The first permanent settlement in Arkansas State, then Upper Louisiana, was in 1686, by Tonti, who was left by Lasalle as commander at "Rock Fort" in the Illinois country, when he descended the Mississippi river with a corps of men, to meet Lasalle with his fleet, that was expected to enter at the mouth of the Mississippi.

Disappointed in this, he was forced to return to the Illinois. On his way, he established "Fort Arkansas," on the Arkansas river, forty miles above its mouth, as early as 1686, leaving a number of his men at this post. At this period, it was then occupied by a tribe, known as the Arkansas. The French associated with them, in all their hunts, frolics and amusements, whilst inter-marrying with them. Hence their descendants were of mixed blood.

The Territory of "Upper Louisiana," embraced a fine climate, lands of every quality, with vast forests, with broad and rolling prairies, with magnificent streams and rivers. The forest was filled with wild fruits of various kinds, suitable to the wants of the hunter and roving wild animals, consisting of the buffalo, bear, elk, deer, otter, goat, fox, raccoon, opossum, rabbits and squirrels. Birds of various species, abounded in the wilderness, consisting of the turkey, ducks, pheasants, partridge, quail, grouse, wild goose, snipe and plover, whilst the wild pigeons, when emigrating, darkened the clouds in their passage either in hunt of their food, or to resort to their roosting place.

President Thomas Jefferson, by Act of Congress October 3, 1803, was authorized to take possession of the "Louisiana Territory." Accordingly for Upper Louisiana, he detailed Capt. Amos Stoddard, of the United States army, for that purpose, which Territory was delivered to



him by Lieutenant-Governor Charles Dehault Delassus, then Spanish Officer, at St. Louis, March 10, 1804. The flag of the United States was then unfurled on the Government house in St. Louis, and full possession taken of this valuable Territory.

The population at this period, in Upper Louisiana was only 9,020 whites and 1,320 slaves, in all 10,340, which was a very small population for so vast a Territory.

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR AMOS STODDARD, COM-  
MANDANT OF UPPER LOUISIANA.

Captain Amos Stoddard, of the Artillery of the United States, was appointed Civil and Military Commandant of Upper Louisiana, and commissioned to exercise the power and prerogatives of the Spanish Governor of that Province. At the time of the taking possession of Upper Louisiana, he issued a proclamation, on the 10th of March 1804, to the inhabitants, explaining the transfer by France to the United States; and the desire of the United States to cultivate their friendship, and protect them in all their rights, both civil and religious, also their being divested of the character of subjects, but now clothed with that of citizens of the United States. That the Government would soon establish a

Territorial government administered by men of wisdom and integrity. That whilst being appointed the temporary guardian of their rights and liberties, that all his time and talents would be devoted to their welfare.

Gov. Stoddard issued a second proclamation April 30th, 1804, against a number of lawless Muskoe and Creek Indians, who had committed depredations and crimes upon the white men of the district, whilst ordering the officers of the several posts to be on their guard and arrest these marauders, and to bring them to trial for their offenses.

LEWIS AND CLARK'S GRAND EXPLORATION TO  
THE PACIFIC OCEAN, MAY 14, 1804, TO  
SEPTEMBER 23, 1806.

Previous to the delivery of the Louisiana Territory, President Jefferson, with the concurrence of Congress concluded to explore the vast country, from the mouth of the Missouri to the Pacific ocean. Captains Merriwether Lewis and William Clark were commissioned for that purpose—both men of long experience, activity, bravery and talents.

“The party consisted of nine Kentucky volunteers, fourteen soldiers of the United States army, two French voyageurs (an interpreter and a hunter), and a black servant. In addition to these a corporal and six soldiers were engaged to accompany them as far as the “Mandan Village,” in consequence of some apprehension of Indian attacks. The stores were divided into seven bales, and one box containing a small portion of each article as a resource in case of accident. They consisted of clothing, locks, flints, powder and ball. To these were added fourteen bales and one box of Indian presents. The party embarked on three boats. The largest one was fifty-five feet long, of three feet draught, one with sail and twenty-two oars, with forecastle and

cabin at the bow and stern, and lockers in the middle, so adjusted, as to be used for breast-work in extremity. This was accompanied by two pirogues of six and seven oars, and two horses were led along the bank of the river for hunting.

This exploring party, on the 14th day of May 1804, after the acquisition of the Louisiana Territory, left the mouth of the Missouri river, with their boats, with sails, oars and cordelles to ascend this muddy and turbulent stream, moving through snags and sunken trees, rounding low islands and bars covered with cotton-woods and willows, to explore an immense wilderness up the Missouri river, over the Rocky Mountains and down the Columbia river, to the Pacific ocean.

“Whilst ascending the Missouri up to Kaw river, they met many rafts and pirogues and canoes loaded with the rich spoils of the mountains and plains. During this time, these hardy men in these frail barks lightened their lots with many a song, in cadence with the measured stroke of the oar; exhibiting around their camp-fires uproarious jests and stories of wild and perilous adventures.” They arrived August 4th, 1804, at “Council Bluffs,” a commanding place, overlooking the plains for miles in every direction, when Lewis and Clark held a council with different tribes of Indians, and smoked the pipe of peace.

After proceeding up the Missouri and relating their intercourse with the savages and

describing the country, on the 7th of April 1805 they dispatched a boat with collections and curiosities, and a letter to President Jefferson. They resumed their voyage up the Missouri in six canoes and two pirogues, with thirty-two men. They passed the "Yellow Stone," being the outskirts of the mountains, the plains breaking into bluffs and ridges, until, June 13, 1805, they approached the "Great Falls" of the Missouri river. The party then making a portage of canoes and baggage, by means of a rude truck wheel, resumed their voyage, enclosed by majestic ranges of mountains, inhabited by a large number of wild grizzly bears and other ferocious animals. Above these Falls, they moved to the three forks, named Jefferson, Madison and Gallatin rivers, then across to the Columbia river, which they descended amid falls and cascades, when they reached the mouth of the Columbia river; then beheld the Great Pacific Ocean, with its blue waves rolling at their feet, on the memorable day of November 7, 1805.

They then explored the country around the Pacific coast, fixing and building huts for the winter along the banks of Meriwether Bay, in the meanwhile subsisting on fish and hunting.

On the 23d March, 1806, they ascended the Columbia river upon their return trip. When reaching the "Great Dalles," — Walla-Walla, they obtained horses, and followed their ascent on the north bank of the river, through rough

and irregular ridges and isolated cliffs. Then they reached and crossed to the south bank, at the mouth of the Walla-Walla river on the Columbia, whose soil is of great fertility, being well watered and timbered. Passing the Blue Mountains to the east, they proceeded to the mouth of Kooskoosie river, afterwards reaching "Traveller's Rest Creek," which they had ascended the previous summer. When at the mouth of this creek, Lewis and Clark divided the party, so as to explore as much country as possible, to meet again at the mouth of Yellow Stone river. The country which they explored, in separate parties then, is replete with interest, but they encountered there many dangers and privations. After the parties had reassembled on the Missouri river, they commenced its descent on the 13th of August, 1806, accompanied by "Big White," a Mandan Chief. Notwithstanding war was then existing between some tribes of Indians on the Missouri river, this exploring party was not disturbed, and landed at the village of St. Louis on the 23d of September 1806, after an absence of two years three months and nine days, traveling 7,500 miles through a vast wilderness and unknown regions.

This wonderful exploration proved of great value to our Government, and immortalized the names of Lewis and Clark,

WILLIAM HARRISON GOVERNOR OF UPPER LOUISIANA FROM OCTOBER, 1804, TO MARCH, 1805.

THE ACT OF CONGRESS OF MARCH 26, 1804.

This act divided the large district of Louisiana into two districts ; the southern part was called " Orleans, " and the northern part, " The District of Louisiana, " then known as Upper Louisiana. This last territory was put under the jurisdiction of the Governor of Indiana and its three Judges. They were authorized to legislate for the District of Louisiana, and two courts to be held annually. The Secretary of Indiana was to preserve all public records and papers. General William Harrison was then Governor, whilst the courts were presided over by Judges Griffin, Vandenberg and Davis, who acted in that capacity from October 1st, 1804, to March, 1805. The Governor of Indiana and the Judges enacted sixteen acts for the government of the " District of Louisiana " :

- 1st.—Crimes and Punishments.
- 2d.—Justice Courts.
- 3d.—Slaves.
- 4th.—Revenue.
- 5th—Militia Laws.
- 6th—Record Offices.

- 7th.—Attorneys.
- 8th.—Constables.
- 9th.—Boatmen.
- 10th.—Defalcation.
- 11th.—Practice at Law.
- 12th.—Probate Business.
- 13th.—Quarter Sessions.
- 14th.—Oaths.
- 15th.—Sheriffs.
- 16th.—Marriages.

Which acts were published, and reference called to them.

ACT OF CONGRESS, MARCH 3, 1805, CREATING  
THE TERRITORY OF LOUISIANA.

By this act the name "District of Louisiana" was changed to the "Territory of Louisiana."— It provided for a Governor for three years, to be commander of the militia and Superintendent of Indian affairs; a Secretary to hold office for four years, who was to act as Governor during the absence of the Governor. The legislative power was vested in the Governor and three Territorial Judges. Under this law, and for the "District of Louisiana," General James Wilkinson, who was then Commander of the army, was appointed Governor, with Judges John B. Lucas and Return



I. Meigs, which constituted the legislature of this Territory. General Wilkinson acted as Governor from March 3rd, 1805, to the year 1807, whilst Joseph Brown acted as Secretary. During the James Wilkinson administration of Upper Louisiana, he formed two important explorations under Lieutenant Pike, one to the sources of the Mississippi river and the other to the sources of Arkansas river, which were of great benefit in establishing the lines of the Western territory of the United States, which separated it from the Spanish and English territories.

James Wilkinson was a native of Maryland. During the American revolution, he was in the expedition under General Arnold, who marched through Canada, from Maine to Quebec. He was at the surrender of Saratoga, resigned his office in 1778, owing to some misunderstanding with Washington. He then removed to Kentucky in 1787, and became a merchant, opened a correspondence with the Spanish officers in New Orleans, descended the Ohio and Mississippi rivers with a cargo of tobacco and flour; afterwards monopolized this trade with the concurrence of the Governor of Louisiana, which left a suspicion of his intrigues with Spain, to dismember Kentucky from its allegiance to the Atlantic States.

After the American revolution in 1783, the people of the West were left in great distress

and destitution from the effects of the war, more especially when Spain claimed dominion over the Mississippi river, laying tribute on its commerce, whilst its desire was to separate the Western portion of the Union from the Atlantic States. The people west of the Alleghany mountains were determined for the free navigation of the Mississippi river, which occasioned bitter feelings, creating several political parties in Kentucky and in the Ohio country. Some were for an independent government ; others for an alliance with Spain ; another to make war against Spain, to wrest from her New Orleans, and to take possession of the Mississippi. During these conflicts occurred the death of General Wayne in 1796. He was succeeded by General James Wilkinson as commander of the United States army.

During the year 1805 Aaron Burr was conspiring to form a Government of western and southern States, and to invade Mexico. After visiting Kentucky and southern cities, Burr arrived in St. Louis in September, 1805. He seemed on very friendly terms with General James Wilkinson, which reflected greatly against Wilkinson, who was at the time commander of the United States army and Governor of Upper Louisiana. Burr was indicted for treason, but acquitted.

FIRST GRAND EXPLORATION OF LIEUTENANT  
ZEBULON MONTGOMERY PIKE, UP TO THE  
SOURCES OF THE MISSISSIPPI RIVER. IN 1805.

This exploration of the Upper Mississippi river was purely a military one, ordered by Gen. James Wilkinson, Commander of the United States army, then stationed at St. Louis, with the consent of the Government. The object was to discover the sources of the Mississippi; to inquire what tribes of Indians inhabited its banks, also to select suitable places for erecting forts, and to obtain the general character of the geography of the country. This expedition was intrusted of Lieutenant Zebulon Montgomery Pike, a native of New Jersey, born January 5th, 1779, and at the time of this exploration, a Lieutenant of Infantry in the United States army. He took command, and was accompanied by one servant, and two corporals with seventeen soldiers, who left their encampments near St. Louis on the 9th day of August 1805, in a keel-boat seventy feet long, with provisions and ammunitions for four months. This was the first trip by any person of the United States.

Adventurers at this period, ascended the river in quest of furs and trade, but not known to the public. Lieutenant Pike had then a fresh field

to explore. Whatever he should see and relate, would be of great interest and of value, of that vast Northwest interior. The greatest difficulties arose in the navigation of the Mississippi, with its numerous channels, which are formed by so many islands in the river, making the navigation slow and dangerous. They ascended up to Dubuque by the first of September and reached "Prairie Du Chien" on the 4th of September 1805; arrived at St. Peters river on the 22d September, where a council of war was held with the Sioux Indians, who disposed of their lands for a military post. They then advanced to the Falls of St. Anthony, where their keel-boat was unloaded, going around by a portage above these Falls.

Proceeding up the Mississippi, they were greatly retarded by ripples, rapids and shoals, and often found it necessary to wade and force their boats along up stream, until they reached 233 miles above the "Falls of St. Anthony," where they erected huts and a station for their party, with a suitable guard to pass the winter. Here they provided themselves with wild game, which was then in great abundance. Lieutenant Pike with a part of his force left this station December 10th, 1805, to proceed up the river, taking one canoe, and some sledges carrying about four hundred pounds each, to be drawn by two harnessed abreast, Pike always in the lead, to extricate the sledges from shoals and rocks,

and to build fires for their encampments. Their ascent continued toilsome and dangerous, in the midst of extreme cold weather. On the 22nd December, Lieutenant Pike remarked: "Never did I undergo more fatigue, in performing the duties of hunter, spy, guide and commanding officer."

The party reached "Sandy Lake" January 8, 1806, where they were received, at a British trading house, established some twelve years previous; there he made known to the British and Indians, the right of the United States to this upper region of country. Lieutenant Pike proceeded up to "Leech Lake," when he found again another British trading post, and was met with hospitality. The party, accompanied by a British trader, reached "Red Lake," then supposed to be the head of the Mississippi river, about the 15th day of February, 1806. At "Lake Unipee," fifteen miles below, was a British post, and a flag of that nation flying from that fort. The "Northwest Company," then had their posts in all this wild region of country.

When Lieutenant Pike and his party had reached the sources of the Mississippi, their exploration ended. They returned back in their homeward march, stopping at their stockade and station they had established, but disappointed in the officer left there in charge, who had disposed of their best provisions and spirits which was a great disappointment to Lieutenant

Pike and his men, who were greatly fatigued and worn out by their exposure to the cold and inhospitable region of country.

They again reached "Prairie Du Chien," April 18th, and entered the port of St. Louis April 30, 1806, being absent eight months and twenty-two days. Lieutenant Pike kept a journal, which was published in 1808, recording the distances made each day, the game killed, the British establishments found, and the Indian tribes who inhabited the banks of the Upper Mississippi.

THE IMPORTANT AND PERILOUS EXPLORATION  
TO THE ARKANSAS, KANSAS, AND PLATTE  
RIVERS, AND INTO THE PROVINCES OF NEW  
SPAIN IN 1806.

This remarkable exploration was ordered by General James Wilkinson, then Governor of Upper Louisiana, and General-in-chief of the United States army, being consented to by the Government. The object of this expedition, from instructions given, was, to restore certain Osage captives, recently recovered from Pottawatomies, to their homes on "Grand Osage;" next to effect a permanent peace between the Kansas and Osage Indians; also to establish a good understanding with the Yanctons and Comanches, etc.

This would lead the party to the branches of the Arkansas and Red rivers, where it would be approximate to New Mexico. They were to move with great caution and to keep clear of any hunting and reconnoitering parties from that Province, and to prevent alarm or offense; also to give general information of the country.

The party selected for this new exploration was Lieutenant Zebulon Montgomery Pike, who had recently finished his expedition to the sources of the Mississippi. The party consisted of two

lieutenants, one sergeant, one surgeon, sixteen soldiers and one interpreter. This organization left St. Louis July 15th, 1806, in two large boats, who proceeded up the Missouri river, until they reached the Osage river on the 28th of July. They then navigated the Osage river up to "the Grand Osages."

They were accompanied by several Osage and Paunee chiefs, with their wives and children, who had returned from Washington City, visiting their great father, President Jefferson. These Indians, numbering fifty-one, had been redeemed from captivity among the Pottawatomies, and were to be restored to their friends at the "Grand Osages." Lieutenant Pike, after reaching up the Osage towns, August 19th, 1806, restored these captives to their friends and nation.

This exploration was accompanied by Doctor John A. Robinson, a man of science, as volunteer, and by Mr. Henry of New Jersey, who spoke French and Spanish; also by Lieutenant James Wilkinson, son of the Commander-in-chief of the United States army. Lieutenant Pike after leaving his boats at the Osage towns, prepared for his land route. So on September 1st, 1806, the party started for their perilous expedition. Accompanied by thirty Indian warriors, they marched until they crossed the ridge that divides the waters which run into the Missouri on one side, and the Arkansas on the other. The



view from this ridge, Lieutenant Pike describes as being sublime, the prairie rising and falling in regular swells, as far as the eye can reach. They came upon the Paunee towns about the first of September, and proceeded their way until they reached on the 18th of October the Arkansas river, where this river was not more than twenty feet wide, but two days afterwards from rains, it spread four hundred and fifty yards in width.

According to instructions Lieutenant Wilkinson, three soldiers and one Osage Indian left the party in three canoes made of wood and buffalo hides, when they descended the Arkansas river to its mouth, then down the Mississippi to New Orleans.

Lieutenant Pike after leaving the Arkansas here, continued his exploration, meeting many wild horses, when ice and snow made their appearance, whilst buffaloes were in great abundance, covering the country; salt was also found in abundance.

On the 15th of November, the peaks of Mexican Mountains were seen, where a station was made for the protection of the party. Lieutenant Pike and Doctor Robinson, moved towards these mountains, to ascertain their position, when they beheld the "Grand Peak." The party were then desirous of reaching Red river, after being entangled in the range of the moun-

tains, and in the depth of a severe winter. Here they wandered half frozen and half starved until, in February 1807, they erected another station as a protection and a defense, and to gather up the men of this expedition. In the meantime Doctor Robinson concluded to reach Santa-Fé, pretending to have a claim against Mexico. The claim was this :

In the year 1804, William Morrison, a merchant of Kaskaskia, sent Baptiste Lalonde, a creole, up the Missouri and Platte rivers, and directed him, if possible to push to Santa-Fé. The Spaniards seized his goods and took him into the Spanish Province. Lalonde finding that he could sell his goods at high prices, and having land and wife offered him, concluded to convert the property of Morrison to his own benefit. This claim was only a ruse to gain information of the country and the people. Doctor Robinson succeeded, though with danger and peril, to reach Santa-Fé.

Lieutenant Pike, whilst on a hunting expedition, on the 16th of February, was discovered by a Spanish dragon, and soon after was surrounded by Spanish troops, who took Pike and his party prisoners. Instead of being on Red river, as he supposed, Pike and his party were on the Rio Del Norte, on Mexican soil instead of United States territory. The party was taken to Santa-Fé, where Pike and party

were examined before its Governor, who, being satisfied of Pike's public character, treated him with hospitality, but seized his papers and sent him under military escort to Chihuahua, where he was re-examined by the Commanding General on the 2nd of April 1807, when he was again sent under escort to the Province of Texas, then to reach the United States post on Red river, which he did at Nacodoches July 1st 1807—nearly absent one year. Pike's exploration at this time was looked upon with suspicion by the Mexicans, as it was reported that Aaron Burr intended to invade Mexico.

Lieutenant Pike and party were welcomed back after their long and perilous tour, by their friends, and much sympathy was felt by the people, in their behalf and safety. Lieutenant Pike upon his return was promoted to the rank of Captain, and gradually to that of Brigadier-General, during the war with England of 1812. General Pike, on his attack at York, during the explosion of the fort, fell a victim in the service of his country, in the bloom of life, at the age of thirty-four years, much regretted by the soldiers and nation.

The relation of the above expedition was published in a volume in 1810, at Philadelphia.

TERRITORY OF LOUISIANA.

Governor James Wilkinson, was succeeded as Governor by Meriwether Lewis, one of the great explorers to the Pacific, which appointment was highly approved by the Western people, and he served in that capacity from 1807 to September 1809. His Secretary was Frederick Bates.

The Territorial Legislature, then enacted several laws, when in the year 1808, these laws were embodied in what is known as "Hempstead Digest."

Governor Lewis was succeeded by Governor Benjamin Howard from September 19, 1810, to November 12, 1812.

## PART VIII.

### MISSOURI TERRITORY—1812.

By Act of Congress of June 4th, 1812, the "Territory of Louisiana" was changed to the "Missouri Territory." The legislative power was vested into a Governor, Legislative Council, and House of Representatives. The Council consisted of nine persons appointed by the President, and to hold office for five years. The lower house consisted of thirteen members, elected by the people, and to hold sessions annually but in 1816 they were to be held biennially. The Territorial Assembly first assembled at St. Louis, Missouri, on the 7th of December 1812.

#### FIRST COUNCIL.

From St. Louis—Auguste Chouteau, Samuel Howard.

St. Genevieve—John Scott, James Maxwell.

St. Charles—J. Flaugherty and B. Emmons.

Cape Girardeau—William Neely and Jos. Cavener.

New Madrid—Joseph Hunter.

## HOUSE OF REPRESENTATIVES

From St. Louis—David Music, Bernard T. Farrar and William C. Carr.

St. Genevieve—George Bullit, Richard S. Thomas and Israel McGreedy.

St. Charles—John Pitman and Robert Spencer.

Cape Girardeau — George F. Bollinger and James Phillips.

At this first session, Hon. William C. Carr, was elected Speaker and Thomas F. Reddick, Clerk *pro tem*. At the second session, held on the 6th of December 1813, Hon. George Bullit, was made Speaker and Andrew Scott, Clerk. On the third session, held on December 5, 1814, Hon. James Cadwell, was elected Speaker. Hon. Bullit and James Cadwell were both from St. Genevieve.

The judicial power of the Missouri Territory was vested in a Superior Court, inferior Courts, and Justices of the Peace. The Superior Court consisted of three judges, any two of them constituting the court, who held office for four years and had original and appellate jurisdiction in civil and criminal cases.

The Legislature on the 21st of August 1813, incorporated the Bank of St. Louis, which ended in failure and disaster.

The counties of Washington, Jefferson, Franklin, Wayne, Lincoln, Pike, Madison, Montgomery, Howard and Cooper were established between 1812 and 1820.

The common law of England was adopted on the 19th of January 1816, provided the same was not repugnant to the Constitution and laws of the United States, and the statutes of the Territory.

In January 1817, the old Bank of Missouri was incorporated, which proved a failure and injurious to the people.

A statute was adopted December 17th, 1818, in relation to real estate, limiting the right of entry to twenty years. In the year 1817, the digest of the statutes of the Missouri Territory, was published by Hon. Henry S. Geyer.

#### GOVERNORS OF MISSOURI TERRITORY.

Frederick Bates, from December 7th, 1812, to July 1813.

William Clark, from July 12th, 1813, to 1820.

Serving until Missouri was organized as a State.

When the Missouri Territory of 1812 was organized, it was a time of great anxiety and trouble owing to the declaration of war against

England. Fortunately for Missouri, she was not endangered by English troops, for the seat of war was along the western lakes and the Atlantic coast ; still we were subject to Indian depredations, whilst measures had to be taken against some of the hostile tribes of Indians within the borders of Missouri. They had to be chastized to secure peace on our frontiers. Another event at this time which created great alarm and distress among the people, was the great earthquakes of New Madrid, in the years 1811 and 1812, which proved so disastrous in the southern portions of Missouri Territory.



## THE TERRITORIAL DELEGATES.

HON. EDWARD HEMPSTEAD, FIRST DELEGATE  
TO CONGRESS FROM MISSOURI TERRITORY.

Stephen Hempstead, the father of Edward Hempstead, was a native of the State of Connecticut. He was a soldier of the American Revolution; distinguished himself at the battle of Bunker Hill, and witnessed the British evacuate Boston. He became a sergeant of the company commanded by the famous Nathan Hale; afterwards, he emigrated to Upper Louisiana in the year 1811.

Edward Hempstead his son, was born June 3d 1870 and was licensed as a lawyer in the State of Connecticut, afterwards removing to Rhode Island. After remaining there some three years he removed to Upper Louisiana in 1804, locating himself at St. Charles; then removed in 1805 to St. Louis. In 1806 he was appointed Deputy Attorney-General of the United States District, and held the office until 1812. Mr. Hempstead in 1808, embodied the laws of Congress and Acts of the Missouri Legislature of 1806-7-8, known as "Hempstead Digest," published in an octavo volume.

The Act of Congress, organizing Missouri as a Territory, entitled her to a delegate in Congress. When an election was held Edward Hempstead was elected from 1812 to 1814.

Mr. Hempstead has the honor of being the first member of Congress elected west of the Mississippi river. During his services in the halls of Congress important laws were passed, confirming the land claims to the inhabitants; and town-lots in the several villages, which had been settled previous to December 1803. The town-lots and out-lots unoccupied were donated for school purposes. After his term of office expired as delegate, he became a member of the Territorial Legislature of Missouri. Edward Hempstead was a man of great energy of character, of good abilities and a useful member of society. He died in St. Louis, on the 10th day of August 1817, much regretted by the inhabitants of Missouri.

HON. RUFUS EASTON, SECOND DELEGATE TO  
CONGRESS FROM MISSOURI TERRITORY.

Rufus Easton was a native of Litchfield, Connecticut; was born May 4th, 1774. After receiving a good education, he studied law, and obtained in his native State a license to practice law. He afterwards removed to Rome, New York State; then visited Washington City during the winters of 1803-4, making there many valuable acquaintances and taking then an active part in political matters. He removed to St. Louis, then Upper Louisiana, about 1805. On March 3d 1805, he was appointed Judge of the "Territory of Louisiana." His commission expired in 1806, but he was not reappointed. He desired the cause, but President Jefferson by letter of February 22d, 1806, declined to give the reason, on the ground that it was not the duty of the President to give his reasons for Federal appointments. President Jefferson, however, in 1806 appointed him United States Attorney for the "Territory of Louisiana," then an important position.

About this period, Aaron Burr visited St. Louis, for the purpose of revolution and conspiracy, to form a Government out of Mexico and the Western and Southern States. Judge Easton, as early as October 20th 1805, wrote to

President Jefferson that General James Wilkinson, then commander of the United States army, and Governor of "Upper Louisiana" — had put himself at the head of a party who was hostile to the best interests of America.

Judge Easton, in 1814, was elected as a delegate to Congress from the "Missouri Territory" and served between the years 1814-1816. During his services in Congress, an Act was passed February 17th 1815, in relation to the relief of the sufferers in New Madrid District, by the earthquakes of New Madrid of 1811 and 1812.

Rufus Easton left a large and respectable family, including seven daughters, one of whom married Hon. Thomas Anderson, of Palmyra; another became the wife of Hon. S. Geyer, one of the most talented lawyers of Missouri; the third married Archibald Gamble, Governor of the State of Missouri; another became the wife of Major Sibley, of St. Louis. His son, Colonel Alton Rufus Easton, who distinguished himself in the service of his country, commanded a regiment in the Mexican war, called "St. Louis Legion."

Judge Rufus Easton, was appointed Attorney-General of the State of Missouri from 1821 to 1826. He died at St. Charles, July 5th, 1834. He was a man of commanding appearance, professing good and generous feelings, fond of good company, and very hospitable at home.

JOHN SCOTT, THIRD DELEGATE TO CONGRESS  
FROM MISSOURI TERRITORY.

Hon. John Scott, delegate to Congress from Missouri Territory, was born in Hanover county, Virginia, May 18, 1785. His parents removed to Pennsylvania, where his father carried on the trade of weaver. The family thence settled at Vincennes, Indiana. Young Scott then assisted his father at his trade and taught school during the winter months. Whilst at Vincennes, he studied law under William Harrison, then Governor of the Northwest Territory, and obtained his license to practice law from him. Mr. Scott then emigrated to the town of St. Genevieve, Missouri, in the year 1805, and commenced the practice of law, and resided there until his death. He was a man of remarkable activity and energy of character, was punctual in attendance on the Territorial and State Courts, except whilst he was in Congress. He acquired a lucrative practice and was attentive to legal business. When traveling, he rode on horseback, well equipped, his saddle was covered with a large sheep skin and upon that there was placed a large pair of saddle bags, filled with books and papers. He traveled thus several times to Washington City, and over a great deal of country, as our courts in early times were held at great distances apart.

No weather stopped him, and nothing daunted him in crossing creeks and rivers to be at his post of duty. His style of speaking was concise, logical and plain, but he spoke with effect to a jury or public assembly. He married an amiable lady, a Miss Catharine Cobb, December 10th, 1810, at Cape Girardeau, Missouri. He had the misfortune of losing his wife in the year 1815. Mr. Scott on the 20th of September, 1824, married a second time. His second wife was Mrs. Harriet Brady, a beautiful and accomplished widow, of the town of St. Louis. He raised a very large family. His father and mother lived with him. His father died at the age of eighty-four, and his mother at seventy-four years, in St. Genevieve.

His brother, Judge Andrew Scott, was appointed one of the Judges of the Superior Court of the Territory of Arkansas, in 1819, by President Monroe. He resided in Arkansas, and died there.

John Scott's house was of the old style, a one-story frame building, with singular additions. It was destroyed by fire on Christmas day in 1870. Since then, upon the site of his home the public school building has been erected, as a compliment of his acts in favor of public education. Scott was rather of short stature, whilst his complexion was clear and healthy, his gait rapid, and remarkably active in all his movements. When

advanced in age, he wore his long white hair in a queue, which fell gracefully over his shoulders ; and at times was fastened in a bunch and kept together by a comb. At court, as well as at other places, he wore on one side of his breast a beautiful carved dirk, and on the other side a pistol, both of which he carried to his death from habit. He was most eccentric, frequently indulging in profanity ; but his suavity of manners and his interesting conversational powers made it less offensive to his hearers. If genteel swearing was an accomplishment in those primitive days, he certainly possessed it in a high degree.

Scott served with credit to himself as a member of our Territorial Legislature, in the Council of Nine, and was one of the framers of our Constitution of 1820.

During the time that he was a candidate for Congress, there were written by some correspondents, who were his political enemies, severe strictures upon his character, in the *Gazetteer*, published in St. Louis. He demanded of Mr. Charless, the editor, the names of the authors, which were given him. Next morning whilst in St. Louis, through General Henry Dodge, and that before breakfast, he challenged to mortal combat five of these correspondents, amongst whom were Hon. Rufus Easton, delegate from Missouri Territory, Mr. Lucas, afterwards killed in a duel by Benton, Dr. Simpson, and others

whose names are not now remembered. They all declined with the exception of Lucas. The difficulty with Lucas was afterwards compromised through friends. Hon. Rufus Easton's reply to him in declining to fight was: "I do not want to kill you, and if you were to kill me I would die as the fool dieth." Scott passed through many serious and dangerous encounters. He acquired much legal reputation in his successful defense of John Smith T., indicted for grave offenses.

Mr. Scott was a candidate for the position of delegate to Congress in 1816, against Easton of St. Charles. Owing to some informality a new election took place, when he was elected. He served as delegate from 1817 to 1821. He was afterwards elected to Congress as representative from the State of Missouri from 1821 to 1828. In the election of 1828 he was defeated by Hon. Edward Bates, which terminated his political career. He presented in Congress a petition of the inhabitants of Missouri in December 1819, for the admission of Missouri as a State. Mr. Scott, in Congress delivered two able speeches on this subject and strongly advocated the admission of Missouri, and sided with Clay's great compromise measure which gave peace to the Union.

When the Presidential contest in the Lower House of Congress took place between Adams and Jackson, Scott, the only member from Mis-



souri in the House of Representatives voted for Adams, which proved his political death. This caused the great quarrel between Benton and Scott. In this connection followed their correspondence, which is introduced as instructive and important :

SCOTT TO BENTON.

Washington City, Feb. 5.

“HON. H. T. BENTON :—Notwithstanding the conversation we had on Thursday evening and on Friday, from which you might justly conclude that I would not vote for Mr. Adams, I am now inclined to think differently, and unless some other change in my mind takes place I shall vote for him. I take the earliest opportunity to apprise you of this fact that you may not commit yourself with friends on the subject.

JOHN SCOTT.”

BENTON TO SCOTT.

Senate Chamber, Feb. 9.

“SIR :—I received on the morning of the 6th inst. your note of the 5th in which you make known to me your intention to give the vote of Missouri to Mr. Adams.

“Sinister rumors, and some misgivings of my own, had been preparing my mind for an extraordinary development : but it was not until I had three times talked with you, face to face that I could believe in the reality of an intention so inconsistent with your previous conversations, so repugnant to your printed pledges, so amazing to your constituents, so fatal to yourself. The vote which you intend thus to give is not your own, it belongs to the people of Missouri. They are against Mr. Adams. I, in their name do solemnly protest against your intentions, and deny your moral power thus to bestow your vote.

“You have been pleased to make a reference in one of your conversations, to my personal wishes in this election.

“I now reiterate that I disdain and repel the appeal, and again remit you to the exalted tribunal of honor and duty.

“For nine years we have been closely connected in our political course ; at length the connection is dissolved, and dissolved under circumstances which announce our everlasting separation.

For some expressions which you felt as unkind in our conversation I ask your pardon and oblivion. I have a right to give you my opinion on a point of public duty, but none to inflict a wound on your public feelings, and, in this unexpected breaking of many ties, there is enough of unavoidable pain, without the gratuitous infliction of unkind words.

“To-morrow is the day for your self-immolation. If you have an enemy, he may go and feed his eyes upon the scene. Your former friend will shun the afflicting spectacle.

“With sincere wishes for your personal welfare, I remain,

THOMAS H. BENTON.”

During Scott's service in public life, by his influence he obtained large grants of land to the State of Missouri, for the location of the Capital of our State government, State University, and lands in each township for school purposes. After the defeat of Scott in 1828, he resumed his legal profession and became eminent as a civil and criminal lawyer. Scott was a man of integrity. When he collected money for his clients, which amounted to considerable sums, he never failed to put these collections in buck-skin bags, with name of owners marked upon them, and would never touch or use this money, for personal use, however pressed he might be in his business.

Mr. Scott died much respected by the people of this State, at the ripe age of eighty years, at his homestead in the city of St. Genevieve and was buried in the Protestant grave-yard by a large concourse of relations and friends, June 9, 1861.

Thus ended the life of one of the pioneers of Missouri, remarkable for his long professional and public career.

### STATE ORGANIZATION.

The Missouri Territorial Legislature in the years 1818 and 1819, made application to Congress for the admission of Missouri as a State. Hon. John Scott, then the delegate from Missouri, and Chairman of the Committee on "Memorial for Missouri," reported a bill—"To authorize the people of Missouri Territory to form a Constitution and State Government, on an equal footing with the original States." This bill was twice read and referred to the committee of the whole House; this was on the 19th of December 1819. An Act was passed by Congress March 6th, 1820, to authorize the inhabitants of the Missouri Territory to organize as a State, and to form a Constitution.

### CONSTITUTION OF MISSOURI AND STATE GOVERNMENT IN 1820.

The delegates to the Convention to form a Constitution for Missouri met in St. Louis June 12th 1820, and concluded their labors July 19th 1820.

DELEGATES.

- St. Louis County. David Barton, Edward Bates,  
Alexander McNair, William Rector, John  
C. Sullivan, Pierre Chouteau.
- St. Genevieve County. Robert T. Brown, John  
D. Cook, Henry Dodge, John Scott.
- Cape Girardeau. Stephen Bird, James Evans,  
Richard S. Thomas, Alexander Buckner, Joe  
McFerron.
- Cooper County. Robert P. Clark, Robert Wal-  
lace, William Lillard.
- Franklin County. John G. Heath.
- Howard County. Nicholas Burkhart, John Ray,  
Duff Green, Jonathan S. Findly, Benjamin H.  
Reeves.
- Jefferson County. S. Hammond.
- Lincoln County. Malcom Henry.
- Montgomery County. James Talbot and Jona-  
than Ramsey.
- Madison County. Nathaniel Cook.
- New Madrid County. Robert D. Dawson, and  
Christopher G. Houts.
- Pike County. Stephen Cleaver.
- St. Charles County. Hiram H. Baber, Benjamin  
Emmons, Nathan Boone.
- Washington County. John Rice Jones, Samuel  
Perry, John Hutchins.
- Wayne County. Elijah Bettis.  
President of Convention. David Barton.  
Secretary of Convention. William G. Pettus.

## HISTORICAL TABLES.

### GOVERNORS OF THE PROVINCE OF LOUISIANA

[At New Orleans ]

#### *Under the Spaniards.*

GENERAL DON O'REILY, . . . . .	from 1769 to 1772
GOVERNOR DON LOUIS UNZAGA, - - -	from 1772 to 1779
“ “ BERNADO GALVEY, - - -	from 1779 to 1786
“ “ ESTEVAN MIRO, - - -	from 1786 to 1791
“ BARON DE CARONDELET, - - -	from 1791 to 1796
“ DON GAYOSO DE LEMOS, - - -	from 1796 to 1799
“ “ MANUEL DE SALCEDO, - - -	from 1799 to 1804

### COMMANDERS OF UPPER LOUISIANA.

#### *Under the French.*

[At St. Louis.]

ST. ANGE DE BELLE RIVE, from October 1765 to May, 1770.

### SPANISH COMMANDANTS IN UPPER LOUISIANA.

[Stationed at St. Louis.]

PIEDRO PIERNAS, - - -	from May 20, 1770, to May 19, 1775
FRANCISCO CRUZAT, - - -	May 19, 1775, to June 17, 1778
FERDINAND LEYBA, - - -	June 17, 1778, to June 8, 1780
FRANCIS DE CARTABONA, - - -	June 8, 1780, to Sept., 1780
FRANCISCO CRUZAT, - - -	Sept. 24, 1780, to Nov. 27, 1787
MANUEL PEREZ, - - -	Nov. 27, 1787, to July 2, 1782
ZENON TRUDEAU, - - -	July 21, 1792, to Aug. 2, 1799
CARLOS DEHAULT DELASSUS, - - -	Aug. 29, 1799, to Mch. 10, 1804

## COMMANDANTS OF UPPER LOUISIANA

### *Under the United States.*

Gov. AMOS STODDARD, from March 10, 1804, to October 1, 1804,  
with full powers and prerogatives of a Spanish Lieutenant-Governor.  
WILLIAM HARRISON, - - - from October 1, 1804, to March, 1805  
JOSEPH BROWN, Secretary.  
JAMES WILKINSON, - - - - from March 3, 1805, to 1807  
JOSEPH BROWN, Secretary.  
MERIWETHER LEWIS, - - - from 1807, to September, 1809  
FREDERICK BATES, Secretary.  
FREDERICK BATES, Acting-Governor, from Sept. 19, 1809 to 1810  
BENJAMIN HOWARD, from September 18, 1810, to November, 1812

## GOVERNORS OF MISSOURI TERRITORY.

FREDERICK BATES, Acting-Gov'nor from Dec. 7, 1812, to July 1812  
WILLIAM CLARK, - - - - from July 1813, to 1820  
FREDERICK BATES, Secretary.

## POPULATION OF LOUISIANA IN 1799, UNDER SPANISH CENSUS.

St. Genevieve - - -	949	Carondelet - - -	184
St. Louis - - - -	925	St. Ferdinand - - -	276
St. Charles - - - -	875	Marais des Liards - - -	376
New Madrid - - - -	782	Meramec - - - -	115
New Bourbon - - - -	560	Little Meadows - - -	72
Cape Girardeau - - -	521		
St. Andrews - - - :	393		6,028

Consisting of Whites, 4,948, free colored, 197; slaves 883.

## POPULATION OF UPPER LOUISIANA IN 1804,

At the Change of Government Under United States.

Whites, - - - - -	9,020
Black, - - - - -	1,320
In all - - - - -	10,340

## PART IX.

---

### THE STATE OF MISSOURI.

---

#### STATE EMBLEMS, DEVICES AND GREAT SEAL.

THE Constitution of Missouri, July 19th 1820, provides in section 22d, that " The Secretary of State shall, as soon as may be, procure a seal of State, with such emblems and devices, as shall be directed by law; which shall not be subject to change. It shall be called " The Great Seal of the State of Missouri."

An Act of the Legislature of the State of Missouri was enacted in accordance to the Constitution, January 11th 1822, as follows :

" Be it enacted by the State of Missouri, that the device for an armorial achievement for the State of Missouri, shall be as follows, to-wit : Arms, parted per pale, on the dexter side gules, the white or grizzly bear of Missouri, *passant gardant*, proper, on a chief engraved azure, a crescent argent; on the sinister side argent, the arms of the United States, the whole within a band inscribed with the words, " United we

stand, divided we fall.' For the crest over a helmet full face, grated with six bars, or, a cloud proper, from which ascends a star argent, and above it a constellation of twenty-three smaller stars argent on an azure field, surrounded by a cloud proper. Supporters on each side, a white or grizzly bear of Missouri, rampant, gardant proper, standing on a scroll, inscribed with the



motto '*Salus Populi, Suprema Lex Esto,*' and under the scroll the numerical letters MDCCCXX.

“ And the great seal of the State shall be so engraved as to present by its impression, the device of the armorial achievement aforesaid, surrounded by a scroll inscribed with the words, ‘ The Great Seal of the State of Missouri,’ in roman capitals, which seal shall be in circular form and not more than two and a half inches in diameter.”



From Well's "*Every Man's Lawyer*," published in New York City in 1867, we quote in relation to this matter: "On a circular shield equally divided by a perpendicular line, is a red field on the right side, in which is the white or grizzly bear of Missouri. Above, separated by a wavy or curved line, is a white or silver crescent, in an azure field. On the left, on a white field, are the arms of the United States.

"A band surrounds the escutcheon, on which are the words 'United we stand, divided we fall.' For the crest, over a yellow or golden helmet, full faced and grated with six bars, is a silver star, and above it a constellation of twenty-three smaller stars. The supporters are two grizzly bears, standing on a scroll inscribed '*Salus populi suprema lex esto*' (The public safety is the supreme law). Underneath are the numerals M<sup>D</sup>CCCXX, and around the circles the words 'The Great Seal of the State of Missouri.'"

## THE FIVE WESTERN UNITED STATES SENATORS.

The private and public life of our five United Senators may prove acceptable, as being now part of the history of the Great West :

### I.—GOVERNOR HENRY DODGE.

HE was born at Vincennes, Indiana, on the 12th day of April 1782, at the time the Dodge family was removing from Kentucky to the great West. Israel Dodge, his father, after a short stay at Vincennes removed to Kaskaskia, Illinois; then about the year 1790, he settled with his family permanently at St. Genevieve, in Upper Louisiana.

Israel Dodge in the year 1805 became the first Sheriff of St. Genevieve District. The Dodge family in early times became the owners of the salt works on the Saline river ; they created quite a business in supplying this useful product to the early inhabitants of St. Genevieve.

Governor Henry Dodge succeeded his father as Sheriff in this district and served in that capacity some fifteen years ; afterwards served as

United States Marshal for the Territory and State of Missouri. During the war of 1812 with England, he raised at St. Genevieve a mounted rifle company, destined for the protection of the inhabitants against Indian depredations. He was afterwards Major of the Territorial Militia, and served until 1814. He further continued in the military service with rank of Colonel, commanding an expedition up the Missouri and Mississippi rivers against the Indians, capturing the Miami villages, near Boonslick.

The *Gazetteer* of Missouri says of General Dodge, "When his line of march was obstructed by the Missouri, on his route to the Miami village, he dashed into the river, followed by the rangers, sitting steadily and erect in their saddles, who swam their horses to the opposite shore. The transit of their ammunition had been secured in a canoe. By this accelerated movement the Miamis were surprised and captured in their village. The Boonslickers, who formed a part of his command in this expedition, were with difficulty restrained by General Dodge from an indiscriminate massacre of the warriors, who so long and so bitterly annoyed these pioneers. They were the more excited, and therefore more excusable for their momentary ferocity, in the discovery which they made in the village of some of the spoils taken from their murdered comrades."

He was afterwards appointed Brigadier-General of the Volunteers by President Madison in the year 1814. Governor Dodge was a prominent member in the Convention of 1820, which formed the Constitution of Missouri.

In the year 1822, after the organization of the State of Missouri, he became Brigadier-General of the Missouri militia. In the Black-Hawk war he served with bravery and distinguished himself at the battles of Wisconsin and Bad-axe. In the year 1832, after the Black-Hawk war, he was commissioned Major of the United States Rangers; and on the 4th of March 1835 was promoted Colonel of the First United States Dragoons, commanding an expedition from Fort Leavenworth to the Rocky Mountains, making important treaties with the Indians on the mountains and plains by the way of the Platte river, and returning by the Arkansas river.

When the Territory of Wisconsin was organized, President Jackson on the 1st of July 1836, appointed General Dodge its Governor. He continued in this capacity until 1841; his jurisdiction included all Iowa, Minnesota and Dakota, which then formed a part of Wisconsin. Governor Dodge was elected delegate to Congress from Wisconsin, serving until 1845, when he was again appointed Governor of that Territory until 1848. When Wisconsin became a State he was elected United States Senator, and served in that capacity until 1857.

Governor Henry Dodge was in figure tall, strong and muscular, of dignified deportment, being a bold and brave man. For half a century he served his country in various capacities, with distinction and usefulness. His life and character in the civil and military fields became a part of the history of the West. He died June 14th 1868, respected by the people, and was buried west of the Mississippi river, at Burlington, Iowa.

## II.—LEWIS F. LINN.

THE model Senator of Missouri, Dr. Lewis F. Linn was born in the vicinity of Louisville, Kentucky, on the 5th of November, 1795. Colonel William Linn, his grand-father, served with distinction under Colonel Roger Clark. He left several children, among whom was Asael Linn, the father of the subject of this sketch. Asael Linn, in early life, with his brother William and two friends, Lewis Field and Wells, were captured near Louisville by the Shawnee Indians, and held prisoners for three years, when they made their escape by killing their guard. They traveled a long way through the wilderness, swam the Ohio river, and returned to Louisville. Asael Linn married the widow of Israel Dodge, formerly of Pennsylvania, she being a woman of great character and romantic disposition. General Henry Dodge, former sheriff of St. Genevieve, the half-brother of Dr. Linn, became, by reason of the death of Asael Linn, the guardian of Lewis F. Linn, and with great care supervised his education. Dr. Linn received his medical education at Louisville. He soon developed great abilities in his profession, and his life was devoted to charitable actions. Dr. Linn settled

permanently at St. Genevieve, then in the Territory of Missouri, in the year 1815.

He married Miss Elizabeth K. Relfe in the year 1818, a daughter of John Relfe, formerly of Virginia. She was a sister of Hon. James Relfe, a man of talent, former commissioner of United States land claims, United States Marshal in 1836 of the district of Missouri, and afterwards member of Congress in 1843 from this State, being the father of the present Hon. Wm. S. Relfe, Commissioner of Insurance of Missouri. Lewis F. Linn was a model of manly beauty, the handsomest man of his day, possessed of great intellectual gifts, and in polite manners a Chesterfield. His conversational powers were simply beautiful, when animated in conversation; his eloquence was unsurpassed, and seemed infused into him, as if by the touch of an angel. Linn was a man of refined and generous impulses, he possessed in a high degree gallantry and patriotism. He rendered great services, not only to Missouri, but to the whole country. If his ashes are not gilt with the pomp of battle, still his private and public virtues are resplendent with lustre and beauty.

Linn's first entrance in public life was his election to the State Senate of Missouri from St. Genevieve district in the year 1830.

President Jackson in the year 1832 appointed him one of the Commissioners of land claims, to settle the old Spanish and French grants. He

was appointed and afterwards elected United States Senator from Missouri, and served with distinction from 1833 to 1843. Senator Linn acquitted himself in that capacity, with honor, in the acquisition of the Platte country for Missouri. He strongly advocated the occupation and settlement of the Pacific coast, and particularly the occupation of Oregon, which caused afterwards an honorable treaty with Great Britain in regard to this Territory. He took an active part in the establishment of forts, post-roads and military roads upon our frontiers, and strongly advocated the improvement of our Western rivers. He was a staunch friend of the early pioneers, in securing their pre-emption claims and the confirmation of land titles by Congress.

During his service in Congress, there were men of great oratorical talents and genius. Senator Linn was highly esteemed by his compeers for his talents and integrity. On one occasion, when he held in his hands a roll of bills to present, and had risen for that purpose, Mr. Buchanan rose, and remarked pleasantly, " Doctor, we will save you the trouble if you recommend them ; we will pass the whole bundle." The suggestion was, in the same spirit, seconded by Mr. Clay. On another occasion, whilst a debate ran high, the Senators being excited on some political question, Henry Clay made a statement which caused Senator Linn to rise to correct him. Immediately Clay paused and



bowed, and waving gracefully his hand, replied, "It is sufficient that it comes from the Senator from Missouri."

Linn was held in great regard and respect by friends and political opponents. He was cautious, brilliant, profound, conciliatory, but uncompromising in principles. He died suddenly at his homestead, in the town of St. Genevieve and was buried in the Protestant graveyard. Over his remains has been erected a monument by the State of Missouri with the following appropriate epitaph:

"Here lie the remains of Lewis F. Linn, the model Senator of Missouri."

### III.—SENATOR GEORGE W. JONES.

THE father of George W. Jones, known as Judge John Rice Jones, was born in Wales in 1759, and was educated for the law. He emigrated to the United States in 1788, and settled first in Philadelphia, afterwards removed to Vincennes in 1787, when the Northwestern Territory was organized.

In 1790, he established himself at Kaskaskia, where he practiced his profession, then returned to Vincennes to act as one of the United States Judges for the Indian Territory. He was appointed in 1807 to revise the Statute of that Territory.

In 1810 he removed to the Missouri Territory; afterwards was elected a member of the Legislature of Missouri from Washington County. He also served as a member of the Convention to form the Constitution of Missouri, in 1820. After this Constitution and State was adopted, he was appointed one of the Judges of the Supreme Court of Missouri, and whilst filling this office, he died in St. Louis in 1814.

General Augustus Jones, — another son of Judge John Rice Jones, was a man of remarkable bravery and activity, who, after leaving Missouri, emigrated to, and died in, the State of Texas.

The poet and writer, Ferguson, in speaking of Augustus Jones, related of him that when a school-boy he was a student at St. Genevieve. As he was sitting with his slate on his knee, a cavalry company passed, and when he heard the bugle sound, he broke his slate on his knee and getting a horse he rode up to the officer and said to him: "I want to go with you." The officer replied: "You are too young and too small for a soldier."

Young Jones continued to follow the soldiers until they crossed the Missouri river at St. Charles. The Indians were very troublesome at St. Charles, and the officer had to take young Jones in to keep him from being scalped.

When they arrived on the Upper Mississippi, it was important that they should communicate with General Atkinson, who was on the eastern shore of the Mississippi river. There was no boat to communicate with General Atkinson. Jones said to the officer:

"I can take the dispatch over the river."

"How will you take it?"

"I will put it in my cap, and swim my horse across the river."

His plan was carried out successfully. He got the answer of General Atkinson, and swimming his horse back across the river, delivered it, which was very important.

Andrew Jackson heard of the swimming of the horse across the river, and remembered it

when he became President. He appointed Jones United States Marshal of Missouri.

George W. Jones, the son of John Rice Jones, was born at Vincennes, Indiana, April 12th 1804. He removed and settled at St. Genevieve, Missouri, about the year 1809.

George W. Jones married at St. Genevieve a Miss Joséphine Grégoire, a descendant of respectable French and German families, who had settled in Upper Louisiana in early times.

Senator Jones, was educated for the profession of law, at the Transylvania University, Lexington, Kentucky. Whilst there, he acted as First Sergeant to the body-guard of General Lafayette, in 1824.

He was in 1826 appointed Clerk of the United States District Court of Missouri, presided by Judge I. H. Peck. Afterwards he served as aid-de-camp to General Henry Dodge in the Black-Hawk war.

He emigrated from St. Genevieve to Iowa, which was then a part of Michigan Territory, in the year 1827, and first settled at "Sinsinawa Mound," seven miles from Dubuque, and became at that early day its post-master, from 1833 to 1835.

From this humble position, he was elected a delegate to Congress from the Territory of Michigan, in the year 1835, for two years. By his close application to the interests of his constituents, he was re-elected by the people in 1837.

During these four years he served as delegate in our National Congress, which was ornamented by men of great eloquence, talents and genius.

In 1838 there occurred a fatal duel between the celebrated Cilley and Graves, which created quite a feeling and excitement in the United States, when the brave Cilley fell in this fatal encounter. Delegate George W. Jones, acted at the time as the second and friend of Cilley.

In the year 1840 President Van Buren, appointed Delegate Jones, Surveyor-General of Wisconsin and Iowa. He was removed in 1841, for political reasons.

In 1841, Jones became Clerk of the Supreme Court of the United States for Wisconsin Territory until 1845. President Polk re-instated Jones as Surveyor-General in 1845, which office he held until 1848.

The State of Iowa in 1848, being admitted into the Union, proceeded to elect two United States Senators, when George W. Jones was selected as one, and was re-elected afterwards, making two terms of service in the Senate.

President Buchanan, appointed Senator Jones as minister to Bogota (United States of Columbia) in the year 1859. He served in that capacity until December 1861.

During the late Civil war, he was arrested and imprisoned in Fort Lafayette, by William H. Seward, but afterwards released by Secretary Stanton, February 22d, 1862.

Senator Jones is rather tall, and good-looking, with a fine black eye ; rather polished in his manners, active in walk and talk,—and has reached the ripe age of eighty-three years. January 7th, 1879, he celebrated his golden wedding, which is seldom witnessed in life.

The people of Dubuque and of Iowa, in consideration of his long public service and poverty, with a truly liberal spirit and devotion to his person, latterly with great generosity relieved him from his obligations, whilst securing to his family his homestead. May they receive the blessing of heaven, for this noble act.

#### IV.—AUGUSTUS C. DODGE.

WAS born January 12th, 1812, in the town of St. Genevieve, Missouri. In his boyhood he aided his father, Governor Henry Dodge in different occupations. At the age of twenty-seven young Dodge settled in the Territory of Wisconsin.

General Dodge, in March 1837, married Miss Clara Hertick. She was the daughter of Professor Joseph Hertick, who had established an academy, in about the year 1815, in St. Genevieve county. Mr. Hertick was a native of Switzerland; he was a ripe scholar, taught the English, French, and German languages.

General Dodge after his marriage settled in the State of Iowa, where in a short time he gained the confidence and esteem of the people by his integrity and generous impulses. He enlisted and served with credit to himself in the Black-Hawk and Winnebago wars of 1827 and 1832, under his father.

In June 1838, he was appointed, by President Van Buren, Register of the land office at Burlington, Iowa. In October of this year, when the first public sale took place, in this capacity he gave general satisfaction.

General Dodge served as delegate in Congress from 1841 to 1847. The Legislature of Iowa elected him United States Senator from 1848 to 1855. The two Dodges were warm advocates of the Homestead bill, graduation bills, and the establishment of military forts throughout the Great West, for the protection of emigrants and pioneers, and strongly advocated the admission of California as a State, and the establishment of the Territorial governments of New Mexico and Utah.

At the same period, in the United States Senate, could be witnessed the two Senators, father and son, representing two sister states, Wisconsin and Iowa, united by blood and advocating the same principles. What a remarkable coincidence and beautiful spectacle presented to the statesmen of the world? It forces us back to the pages of Grecian and Roman history for examples and illustrations of this character.

Senator Dodge was afterwards appointed to the important position of Minister to Spain, and in that capacity served his country well, especially in arranging the troubles arising out of the seizure by Spain of the steamer Black Warrior; and the difficulties arising out of the commerce with the Island of Cuba.

Senator Dodge, after his long public career, devoted his time to his private affairs; and served the people of Burlington, in the capacity of Mayor of that growing and thriving city.



Senator Dodge was a well formed person, stood erect, bore the character of a courteous gentleman, was remarkable for sobriety, and punctual in his relations with mankind. He died at Burlington, Iowa, November 20th 1883, greatly lamented by his friends and the people of the West.

V.—LEWIS V. BOGY.

THE BOGY family is an ancient and honorable family, who settled in early times in the Great West. Hon. Joseph Bogy, Sr., the father of Lewis V. Bogy, was born at Kaskaskia, Illinois. His first public occupation was as private secretary under Morales, Spanish Governor of Louisiana; he afterwards became a citizen of St. Genevieve, Missouri. He served in the House of Representatives of Missouri; became also one of its State Senators. He married a Miss Beauvais, who belonged of a very influential family of Upper Louisiana. He was a man of affable manners, a well educated person, and of great integrity of character.

Lewis V. Bogy, his son, was born in the town of St. Genevieve, Missouri, April 9th 1813. In his youth he acquired the rudiments of an education, until he had the misfortune at the age of fourteen years to be attacked by a "white swelling" on the right hip, and was confined for two years in his room; but by the great care and skill of Doctors Linn and Cluck, recovered his health. He then took the resolution to study law, and went to Kaskaskia, to engage in his studies under Judge Nathaniel Pope.

Bogy in his youth showed great ambition to

enter public life, and determined to reach the high position of United States Senator, which he did as a member of the United States Senate from the great State of Missouri.

In the year 1832, he served as volunteer in the Black-Hawk war. Shortly afterwards he attended the law-school at Lexington, Kentucky; then went to Wayne county in said State and became a school teacher.

Whilst at Lexington as a student, Bogy attended a lecture delivered by a New England minister, who indulged in very strong language against the people of St. Louis, including Jews, the French and the Catholic Church. Bogy listened with patience until he spoke of the women with unbecoming severity, when he jumped from his seat and in a loud voice said, "Now stop, sir, I pronounce what you say about St. Louis an absolute falsehood." The preacher became confused which occasioned a smile from the audience.

Bogy returned to St. Genevieve in 1835. He afterwards removed to St. Louis, to practice as a lawyer; but soon his ambition led him to a political life, and he was elected from St. Louis County as a member of the Legislature, in the year 1840. Whilst residing in St. Louis, he went to the city of New York, where he married a daughter of General Bernard Pratte, a woman of domestic habits and of great virtue.

Bogy at this time was a Whig, and was a strong advocate of Mr. Clay's doctrines. In

1849 he removed to St. Genevieve, his native town and took an active part in politics, becoming "Anti-Benton." In the year 1852 he became a candidate for Congress against Benton, and met with defeat. Becoming a candidate for the Legislature from St. Genevieve County in 1854, against Hon. Sifroid Roussin, the son-in-law of Hon. John Scott, a Whig, he was again defeated.

Lewis V. Bogy again concluded to run for the Legislature as an Anti-Benton. His opponent as a Benton-man was Hon. Firmin A. Rozier. This canvass was one of the bitterest and stirring ones of the State, which resulted in the election of Bogy.

He again removed to St. Louis, and became a democratic candidate for Congress in 1863 against Frank Blair, and was defeated. President Johnson in 1867 appointed him Commissioner of Indian affairs. He served in that capacity six months. Not being confirmed by the Senate, he withdrew from office.

The political affairs of the State of Missouri, about this time became turbulent and unsettled, owing to the effects of the late war, also from the great interest felt in the election of a United States Senator. The result was that Hon. Lewis V. Bogy was elected from Missouri, from March 4, 1873 to 1879, in the capacity of Senator. He served with credit to himself and constituents.

Senator Bogy was a tall and well-formed person, rather mild in disposition, charitable in character, possessing good conversational powers. As a speaker his delivery was graceful; as a debater he was zealous and enthusiastic. Originally he was a strong Whig, afterwards Anti-Benton, and latterly acted with the Democratic party and became a Democrat in feelings and principles.

During the Civil war, he warmly sympathized with the South, in their constitutional rights, and strongly desired the restoration of the Union; and a strict adherence to the original constitution.

Senator Lewis V. Bogy died in the city of St. Louis on the 20th of September 1877, regretted by a large number of friends and relatives, and by his compeers in the United States Senate.

## PART X.

### AUDUBON AND ROZIER.

AUDUBON, THE ORNITHOLOGIST.--ROZIER, THE  
WESTERN MERCHANT.

THE Audubon and Rozier families were originally from Nantes, France. James Audubon, the father of John Audubon, was engaged in the marine of France during the French revolution and the Napoleon dynasty. Whilst in the West India Islands he purchased a plantation in St. Domingo. Afterwards he went with his family to Louisiana, where his son John, the ornithologist, was born on the 4th day of May, 1780, after which the family left Louisiana and returned to France. John Audubon, while in France, was sent to school by his father and instructed in drawing, mathematics, geography, and painting by the famous James David of French notoriety. During the French revolution, Audubon after leaving school entered the French navy as a midshipman, but was in the service only a short time.

Mr. Ferdinand Rozier was born at Nantes, France, on the 9th of November, 1777. His father, Judge Francis Rozier, was the Commercial Judge of Nantes for many years and enjoyed a good reputation for talent and legal acquirements. He was sent to college while quite young and acquired a good education. During the terrible struggle between Napoleon and Great Britain for the supremacy of the ocean, he at the age of twenty-five entered the French navy on the 28th of May, 1802, on the ship *La Renommée*, commanded by Capt. Frichaud, and bound for *Bonne Espérance* (Good Hope) and the Island of France. While at the Island of France the ship was captured and the crew disarmed, on the 3d day of March, 1803. Rozier on the 16th of June, 1803, was ordered on the brig *Bon Victor*, in command of Capt. Mayseau, who sailed for the port of Cadiz, Spain. From there he embarked on board the goelette *La Sylvia*, Captain Bonler commanding, who sailed to St. Croix (Isle Tenneriffe), where they arrived December 31, 1803, and leaving this port January 26, they sailed for St. Bartholomew (Isle Suédoise), where they cast anchor March 26, 1804.

Rozier, on April 8, 1804, embarked on the cutter *La Experiment*, Captain Upton, bound for the United States, visiting several ports along the Atlantic from Philadelphia to Norfolk, Virginia; and from the last port he embarked on the

frigate *Le Président*, commanded by Captain Gallie Lebrose, who sailed for France, entering the port of Nantes March 1, 1805. After encountering many dangers and adventures on the ocean, he retired from the navy and concluded with Audubon to emigrate to America.

Audubon and Rozier left France April 12, 1806, for the United States, arriving in New York City May 26 of that year. They crossed the ocean on an American ship named the *Polly*, bearing the United States flag, and commanded by Captain Sammis. Whilst on her trip she was overhauled, searched and robbed by an English privateer bearing the name of *Rattlesnake*, the commander of which impressed two American sailors, notwithstanding the American captain's remonstrances. The *Polly* was detained one day and night.

Audubon and Rozier removed to Pennsylvania on a tract of land called "Mill Grove," owned by their fathers, and located on the Perkomong creek, in Montgomery county. They remained there from May, 1806, to August 1807, superintending this property, which at the time was thought to contain valuable minerals.

Audubon and Rozier left Philadelphia August 31, 1807, on a commercial tour to the West. They traveled by the way to Lancaster, Harrisburg, Chambersburg, Bedford, Pittsburg—where they stopped at the Jefferson hotel, conducted by Mr. Gillaud. They left Pittsburg on a low, flat-



bottomed boat, floating down the Ohio river until they reached Maysville, Kentucky, on the 30th of September, 1807, where they disembarked. From there they visited Lexington, October 2, 1807, afterwards Frankford, Paris, Danville, Springfield, Bardstown and Louisville, sojourning in Kentucky part of 1807 to 1810. During the spring of 1808 Audubon returned to Pennsylvania, where he was married to Miss Lucy Bakewell on the 8th day of April, 1808, and soon returned to Louisville with his bride.

Rozier and Audubon, in the year 1810, at Louisville, purchased a keel-boat, with provisions, groceries, and 310 barrels of good Kentucky whiskey, destined for St. Genevieve, Upper Louisiana.

#### THE KEEL-BOAT.

“ Their boat was new, staunch and well trimmed, and had a cabin in her bow. A long steering oar, made of the trunk of a slender tree, about sixty feet in length, and shaped at its outer extremity like the fin of a dolphin, helped to steer the boat, while the four oars from the bow impelled her along, when going with the current, about five miles an hour.”

After leaving the Falls of Louisville, they in the fall of 1810 floated down the Ohio river, stopping for a short time at Hendersonville, Kentucky and other landings, until they reached Cash

creek, a small stream with a good harbor, where they anchored for a few days. During this time Audubon availed himself of penetrating the wild forest, and taking a great hunt with a few warriors and squaws. We give in full this interesting and graphic account of this great Swan and Bear hunt; also of their difficult and perilous navigation of the Ohio and Mississippi rivers to St. Genevieve, at this early period, being in the spring of 1811, previous to steam power being introduced in the navigation of our great Western rivers.

AUDUBON'S GREAT SWAN AND BEAR STORY.

“The second morning after our arrival at Cash creek, while I was straining my eyes to discover whether it was dawn or not, I heard a movement in the Indian camp, and discovered that a canoe with half a dozen squaws and as many hunters were about leaving for Tennessee. I heard there was a large lake opposite to us where immense flocks of swans resorted every morning, and asking permission to join them I seated myself on my haunches in the canoe, well provided with ammunition and a bottle of whiskey, and in a few minutes the paddles were at work, swiftly propelling us to the opposite shore. I was not much surprised to see the boat paddled by the squaws, but I was quite so to see the hunters stretch themselves out and go to sleep.

“On landing, the squaws took charge of the canoe and went in search of nuts, while we gentlemen hunters made the best of our way through thick and thin to the lake. Its muddy shores were overgrown with a close growth of cotton trees, too large to be pushed aside and too thick to pass through except by squeezing yourself at every few steps; and to add to the difficulty, every few rods we came to a small,

dirty lagoon, which one must jump, leap or swim, and this not without peril of broken limbs or drowning. But when the lake burst upon our view, there were the swans by hundreds, and white as rich cream, either dipping their black bills in the water, or stretching out one leg on its surface, or gently floating along.

According to the Indian mode of hunting, we had divided, and approached the lagoon from different sides. The moment our vidette was seen it seemed as if thousands of large, fat and heavy swans were startled, and as they made way from him they drew towards the ambush of death; for the trees had hunters behind them, whose touch of the trigger would carry destruction among them. As the first party fired, the game rose up and flew within easy distance of the party on the opposite side, when they again fired, and I saw the water covered with birds floating with backs downward, their heads sunk in the water and their legs kicking in the air. When the sport was over we counted more than fifty of these beautiful birds, whose skins were intended for the ladies in Europe. There were plenty of geese and ducks, but no one condescended to give them a shot.

“ A conch was sounded and after awhile the squaws came, dragging the canoe and collecting the dead game, which was taken to the river's edge, fastened to the canoe and before dusk we were again landed at our camping-grounds. The

fires were soon lighted and a soup of pecan nuts and bear fat made and eaten. The hunters stretched themselves with their feet close to the camp-fires, intended to burn all night. The squaws then began to skin the birds, and I retired, very well satisfied with my Christmas sport.

“ When I awoke in the morning and made my rounds through the camp, I found a squaw had been delivered of beautiful twins during the night, and I saw the same squaw at work tanning deer skins. She had cut two vines at the roots of opposite trees and made a cradle of bark, in which the new-born ones were wafted to and fro with a punch of her hands, while from time to time she gave them the breast, and was apparently as unconcerned as if the event had not taken place.

“ An Indian camp on a hunting expedition is by no means a place of idleness, and although the men do little more than hunt, they perform their task with an industry which borders on enthusiasm. I was invited by these hunters to a bear hunt. A tall, robust, well-shaped fellow assured me that we should have some sport that day, for he had discovered the haunts of one of large size, and he wanted to meet him face to face, and we four started to see how he would fulfil his boast.

“ About half a mile from the camp he said he perceived his tracks, though I could see nothing;

and we rambled through the cane until we came to an immense decayed log, in which he swore the bear was. I saw his eyes sparkle with joy, his rusty blanket was thrown off his shoulders, his brawny arms swelled with blood, as he drew his scalping-knife from his belt with a flourish which showed that fighting was his delight. He told me to mount a small sapling, because a bear cannot climb one, while it can go up a large tree with the nimbleness of a squirrel. The two other Indians seated themselves at the entrance, and the hero went in bodily.

All was silent for a few moments, when he came out and said the bear was dead and I might come down. The Indians cut a long vine, went into the hollow of the tree, fastened it to the animal, and with their united force dragged it out. I really thought this was an exploit. Since then I have seen many Indian exploits which proved to me their heroism. In Europe or America the white hunter would have taken his game home and talked about it for weeks, but these simple people only took off the animal's skin, hung the flesh in quarters on the trees, and continued the hunt. Unable to follow them, I returned to the camp, accompanied by an Indian, who broke the twigs of the bushes as we passed, and sent back two squaws on the track who brought the flesh and skin to the camp."

## THEIR VOYAGE UP THE MISSISSIPPI

---

We give to our readers, Audubon's interesting narration of this voyage up the Mississippi to the town of St. Genevieve :

“ After floating down the Ohio, we entered the Mississippi river running three miles an hour, and bringing shoals of ice to further impede our progress. The patron ordered the line ashore, and it became the duty of every man “ to haul the cordelle,” which was a rope fastened to the bow of the boat, and one man left on board to steer, the others laying the rope over their shoulders, slowly wafted the heavy boat and cargo against the current. We made seven miles that day up the famous river. At night we camped on the shores. Here we made fires, cooked supper, and setting one sentinel, the rest went to bed and slept like men who had done one good day's work.

“ The next day we began to move the boat at about one mile an hour against the current. We had a sail on board, but the wind was ahead, and we made ten miles that day. We made our fires, and I lay down to sleep again in my buffalo robes. Two more days of similar toil fol-

lowed, when the weather became severe, and our patron ordered us to go into winter quarters, in the great bend of the Tawapattee Bottom.

“ There was not a white man’s cabin within twenty miles, and that over a river we could not cross. We cut down trees and made a winter camp. But a new field was open to me, and I rambled through the deep forests, and soon became acquainted with the Indian trails and the lakes in the neighborhood.

“ The Indians have the instinct or sagacity to discover an encampment of white men almost as quickly as vultures sight the carcass of a dead animal; and I was not long in meeting strolling natives in the woods. They gradually accumulated, and before a week had passed, great numbers of these unfortunate beings were around us, chiefly Osages and Shaunees. The former were well-formed, athletic and robust men of a noble aspect, and kept aloft from the others. They hunted nothing but large game, and the few elks and buffaloes that remained in the country.

“ The latter had been more in contact with the whites, were much inferior, and killed opossum and wild turkeys for a subsistence. The Osages being a new race to me, I went often to their camp, to study their character and habits; but found much difficulty in becoming acquainted with them. They spoke no French, and only a



few words of English, and their general demeanor proved them to be a nobler race. They were delighted to see me draw, and when I made a tolerable likeness of one of them with red chalk they cried out with astonishment, and laughed excessively. They stood the cold much better than the Shaunees, and were much more expert with bows and arrows.

“ The bones we threw around our camp attracted wolves, and afforded us much sport in hunting them. Here I passed six weeks pleasantly, investigating the habits of wild deer, bears, cougars, raccoons and turkeys, and many other animals, and I drew more or less by the side of our great camp-fire every day, and no one can have an idea of what a good fire is, who has never seen a camp-fire in the woods of America. Imagine four or five ash trees, three feet in diameter and sixty feet long cut and piled up, with all their limbs and branches, ten feet high, and then a fire kindled on the top with brush and dry leaves ; and then under the smoke the party lies down and goes to sleep.

“ Here our bread gave out, and after using the breast of wild turkey for bread, and bear’s grease for butter, and eating opossum and bear’s meat until our stomachs revolted, it was decided that a Kentuckian named Pope, our clerk, and a good woodsman should go with me to the nearest settlement and try and bring some Indian meal.

“ On the way we saw a herd of deer, and turned aside to shoot one ; and having done so, and marked the place, we continued our journey. We walked until dusk, and no river appeared. Just then I noticed an Indian trail, which we supposed led to the river, and after following it a short distance, entered the camp we had left in the morning. My partner Rozier finding we had no loaves in our hands, and no bags of meal on our shoulders, said we were boobies, the boatman laughed, the Indians joined the chorus, and we ate some cold raccoon, and stumbled into our buffalo robes, and were soon enjoying our sleep.

“ The next day we tried it again, going directly across the bend, suffering neither the flocks of turkeys, nor the droves of deer we saw, to turn us aside until we had Cape Girardeau in full sight, an hour before the setting of the sun. The ice was running swiftly in the river, and we hailed in vain, for no small boat dared put out. An old abandoned log house stood on our bank, and we took lodgings there for the night. We made a little fire, ate a little bear's dried meat we had brought, and slept comfortably.

“ Day-light returned fair and frosty, the trees covered with snow and icicles, shining like jewels as the sun rose on them, and the wild turkeys seemed so dazzled by their brilliancy, that they allowed us to pass under them without flying.

“ After a time we saw a canoe picking its way through the running ice. Through the messen-

ger who came in the boat, we obtained a barrel of flour, several bags of Indian meal, and a few loaves of bread. Having rolled the flour in a safe place, slung the meal in a tree, and thrust our gun barrels through the loaves of bread, we started for our camp and reached it after midnight. Four men were sent the next morning with axes, to make a sledge and drag the provisions over the snow to the camp.

“The river, which had been constantly slowly rising, now began to fall, and prepared new troubles for us, for as the water fell, the ice clung to the shore, and we were forced, to keep the boat afloat, to unload the cargo. This, with the help of all the Indian men and women, took two days. Then we cut large trees, and fastened them to the shore above the boat, so as to secure it from the ice, which was accumulating, and to save the boat from being cut by it.

“We were now indeed in winter quarters. The Indians made baskets of cane. Mr. Pope played on the violin, and I on the flute, the men danced, and the squaws looked on and laughed, and the hunters smoked their pipes with such serenity as only Indians can, and I never regretted one day spent there.

“While our time went pleasantly enough, a sudden and startling catastrophe threatened us without warning. The ice began to break, and our boat was in danger of being cut to pieces by the ice-floes, or swamped by their pressure.

Roused from our sleep, we rushed down pell-mell to the bank, as if attacked by savages, and discovered the ice was breaking up rapidly. It split with reports like those of heavy artillery. Our boat was in imminent danger, for the trees which had been placed to guard it from the ice, were cut or broken to pieces, and were thrust against her. It was impossible to move her; but our pilot ordered every man to bring down great bunches of cane, which were lashed along her sides; and before these were destroyed by the ice, she was afloat, and riding above it.

“While we were gazing on this scene, a tremendous crash was heard, when suddenly the great dam of ice gave way, and in less than four hours, we witnessed the complete breaking up of the ice. The cargo was again put on board of the boat, and our camp given up to the Indians. After bidding mutual adieus, as when brothers part, fortunately we reached safely Cape Girardeau. But this village was small, and no market for us, and we determined to push up to St. Genevieve.

“We arrived in a few days at the Grand Tower Missouri, where an immense rock in the stream makes navigation dangerous. Here we used our cordelles, and with great difficulty and peril passed it safely. It was near this famous tower of granite, that I first saw the great Eagle that I named General Washington. The weather

continued favorable, and we arrived at St. Genevieve, and found a favorable market.”

Their business at St. Genevieve prospered, but Audubon had no taste or talent for commerce, nor did he give much time to business; in fact, during his stay in Kentucky, and their trip down the Ohio and up the Mississippi, and whilst at St. Genevieve, he was continually in the forest, hunting and painting from nature the many birds and fowls. Rozier being entirely devoted to business, and perceiving that Audubon neglected the store, proposed to purchase his interest, which he did on the 11th day of April, 1811, which dissolved the partnership of Audubon and Rozier.

Rozier was highly successful as a merchant and remained at St. Genevieve. Audubon returned to Kentucky, established a saw-mill at Hendersonville, making a total failure in this enterprise, which embittered him against his friends because they would not aid him in his wild speculation. Fortunately for himself and country it drove him to become an ornithologist, which afterwards gave him great honor and renown.

Audubon was a well-formed person, had an intellectual face and a remarkably strong constitution; was fond of dress, and wore his long locks in clusters over his shoulders. He possessed many talents; he was a good fencer and

dancer, expert swimmer, remarkable hunter, excellent musician and skilled in crayon sketches and portrait painting, and was unsurpassed as an ornithologist. His enthusiasm in his profession led him to explore the wilds of Kentucky, the savannas of the South, and the icy region of Labrador and the ranges and the defiles of the Rocky Mountains.

When Rozier in 1842 returned from his last voyage to France, he was kindly invited by Audubon to visit him at his homestead on the Hudson. Their last meeting took place in New York City, at an entertainment given them by their mutual friend, M. Berthoud. At this general meeting the old friends and partners, the ornithologist and merchant, recalled with pleasure their past struggle and adventure in the far West.

There is at St. Genevieve an excellent crayon portrait of General J. Baptiste Bossier, by Audubon, now in possession of his daughter, Mrs Simon Guignon.

Mr. Griswold gives the following picture of Audubon's home in the year 1846: "The house was simple and unpretending in its architecture and beautifully embowered amid elms and oaks. Several graceful fawns and a noble elk were stalking in the shade of the trees, apparently unconscious of the presence of a few dogs and not caring for the numerous turkeys, geese and other domestic animals that gobbled and screamed

around them. Nor did his own approach startle the wild, beautiful creatures, that seemed as docile as any of their companions. In the house, antlers of elks hung upon the wall ; stuffed birds of every description of gay plumage ornamented the mantle-piece, and the exquisite drawings of field mice, orioles and wood-peckers were scattered promiscuously in the house."

He further describes Audubon as a tall, thin man, with a high arched and serene forehead, and a bright, penetrating, gray eye ; his white locks fell in clusters upon his shoulders, but were the only signs of age, for his form was erect and his step as light as that of a deer. The expression of his face was sharp, but noble and commanding, and there was something in it partly derived from the aquiline nose and partly from the shutting of the mouth which made you think of the imperial eagle.

Mr. Rozier, Sr., married Constance Roy of Illinois, August 19th, 1813, at St. Genevieve, Missouri, whilst living at Mr. Jean Baptiste Valle, Sr., who was the last commander of the post at St. Genevieve under the Spanish and French governments. Mrs. Rozier was born near Fort Chartres, Illinois, October 8th, 1795. Her life was spared long enough to witness the rapid growth of Upper Louisiana, now Missouri. She was a woman of strong intellect, and remarkable for industry and health. Mr. Rozier and wife had ten children, and one hundred and ten

grand and great grand-children, at the time of their death. They were both buried at the old Catholic grave-yard at St. Genevieve. Mr. Rozier lived to the age of over eighty-six and his wife to eighty-three years.

Mr. Rozier was a very active merchant, having extended his business throughout all of Upper Louisiana. The transport of goods at that early period from New Orleans to the East and West was quite difficult and dangerous, but this did not prevent him from obtaining large supplies of merchandise, and no less than six times on horse-back did he travel from St. Genevieve to Philadelphia, and it was only by his prudence, boldness and great industry that his expeditions always proved successful.

He was a man of strong constitution, his habits were regular, his disposition kind, polite and very obliging to every person, and no man enjoyed a greater reputation for truth, candor and honesty. And having witnessed in his youth the French revolution, it was painful to him again to witness the civil war in the United States, for he died in St. Genevieve, January 1, 1864, having attained, as mentioned above, the venerable age of over eighty-six years.



### AUDUBON'S MIRACULOUS ESCAPE.

When Audubon left St. Genevieve for Hendersonville, Kentucky, to return to his family, which then sojourned there, he met in this voyage a remarkable adventure and made a miraculous escape, the account of which we give in his own language :

“ On my return from the Upper Mississippi, I found myself obliged to cross one of the wild prairies, which in that portion of the United States, vary the appearance of the country. The weather was fine, all around me was as fresh and blooming as if it had just issued from the bosom of nature. My knapsack, my gun and my dog were all I had for baggage and company. But although well moccasined, I moved slowly along, attracted by the brilliancy of the flowers, and the gambols of the fawns around their dams, to all appearances as thoughtless of danger as I felt myself.

“ My march was of long duration. I saw the sun sinking beneath the horizon long before I could perceive any appearance of woodlands, and nothing in the shape of man had I met with that day. The track which I followed was only an old Indian trail, and as darkness overshadowed

the prairie, I felt some desire to reach at least a copse, in which I might lie down to rest. The night-hawks were skimming over and around me, attracted by the buzzing wings of the beetles, which form their food, and the distant howling of the wolves gave me some hope that I should soon arrive at the skirts of some woodland.

“ I did so, and almost at the same instant a fire-light attracting my eye, I moved towards it, full of confidence that it proceeded from the camp of some wandering Indians. I was mistaken. I discovered by its glare that it was from the hearth of a small log cabin, and that a tall figure passed and repassed between it and me, as if busily engaged in household arrangements.

“ I reached the spot, and presenting myself at the door, asked the tall figure, which proved to be a woman, if I might take shelter under her roof for the night. Her voice was gruff, and her dress negligently thrown around her. She answered in the affirmative. I walked in, took a wooden stool, and quietly seated myself by the fire. The next object that attracted my notice, was a finely formed young Indian, resting his head between his hands, with his elbows on his knees. A long bow rested against the log wall near him, while a quantity of arrows and two or three raccoon skins lay at his feet. He moved not; apparently he breathed not.

“ Accustomed to the habits of Indians, and knowing that they pay little attention to the

approach of civilized strangers, I addressed him in French, a language not unfrequently partially known to the people of that neighborhood. He raised his head, pointed to one of his eyes with his finger, and gave me a significant glance with the other; his face was covered with blood.

“ The fact was that an hour before this, as he was in the act of discharging an arrow at a raccoon in the top of a tree, the arrow had split upon the cord, and sprung back with such violence into his right eye as to destroy it for ever.

“ Feeling hungry, I inquired what sort of a fare I might expect. Such a thing as a bed was not to be seen, but many large untanned buffalo hides lay piled in a corner. I drew a time-piece from my pocket, and told the woman that it was late, and that I was fatigued. She espied my watch, the richness of which seemed to operate on her feelings with electric quickness. She told me there was plenty of venison and jerked buffalo meat, and that on removing the ashes I should find a cake. But my watch had struck her fancy, and her curiosity had to be gratified by an immediate sight of it. I took off the gold chain which secured it around my neck, and presented it to her. She was all ecstasy, spoke of its beauty, asked me its value, and put the chain around her brawny neck, saying how happy the possession of such a watch would make her. Thoughtless, and, as I fancied myself in so retired a place, secure, I paid little attention to her talk or to

her movements. I helped my dog to a good supper of venison, and was not long in satisfying the demands of my own appetite.

“ The Indian rose from his seat as if in extreme suffering. He passed and repassed me several times, and once punched me on the side so violently that the pain nearly brought forth an exclamation of anger. I looked at him, his eye met mine, but his look was so forbidding, that it struck a chill into the more nervous part of my system. He again seated himself, drew his butcher knife from its greasy scabbard, examined its edge, as I would do that of a razor suspected dull, replaced it, and again taking his tomahawk from his back, filled the pipe of it with tobacco, and sent me expressive glances whenever our hostess chanced to have her back towards us.

“ Never until that moment had my senses been awakened to the danger which I now suspected to be about me. I returned glance for glance to my companion, and rested well assured that, whatever enemies I might have, he was not of their number.

“ I asked the woman for my watch, wound it up, and under the pretense of wishing to see how the weather might probably be on the morrow, took up my gun, and walked out of the cabin. I slipped a ball into each barrel, scraped the edges of my flints, renewed the primings, and running to the hut, gave a favorable account of my observations. I took a few bear skins,

made a pallet of them, and calling my faithful dog to my side, lay down, with my gun to my body, and in a few moments was to all appearance fast asleep.

“ A short time had elapsed, when some voices were heard, and from the corner of my eyes I saw two athletic youths making their entrance, bearing a dead stag on a pole. They disposed of their burden, and asking for whiskey, helped themselves freely to it. Observing me and the wounded Indian, they asked who I was, and why the devil that rascal (meaning the Indian, whom they knew understood not a word of English,) was in the house ?

“ The mother, for so she proved to be, bade them to speak less loudly, made mention of my watch, and took them to a corner, when a conversation took place, the purpose of which it required little shrewdness in me to guess. I tapped my dog gently, he moved his tail, and with indescribable pleasure I saw his fine eyes alternately fixed on me and raised towards the two in the corner. I felt that he perceived danger in my situation. The Indian exchanged the last glance with me.

“ The lads had eaten and drunk themselves into such a condition, that I already looked upon them as *hors de combat* ; and the frequent visits of the whiskey bottle to the ugly mouth of their dame, I hoped would soon reduce her to a like state.

“ Judge of my astonishment when I saw that incarnate fiend take a large carving-knife, and go to the grind-stone to whet its edge. I saw her pour the water in the turning machine, and watched her working away with the dangerous instrument, until the cold sweat covered every part of my body, in despite of my determination to defend myself to the last. Her task finished, she walked to her reeling sons, and said, ‘ There ! that’ll soon settle him. Boys, kill yon——, and then for the watch !’

“ I turned, cocked my gun-locks silently, touched my faithful companion, and lay ready to start up and shoot the first who might attempt my life. The moment was fast approaching, and that night might have been my last in this world, had not Providence made provision for my rescue.

“ All was ready. The infernal hag was advancing slowly, probably contemplating the best way of dispatching me whilst her sons should be engaged with the Indian. I was several times on the eve of rising, and shooting her on the spot, but she was not to be punished thus. The door was suddenly opened, and there entered two stout travelers, each with a long rifle on his shoulder.

“ I bounced up on my feet, and making them most heartily welcome, told them how well it was for me that they should have arrived at that moment. The tale was told in a minute. The

drunken sons were secured, and the woman, in spite of her defense and vociferations, shared the same fate.

“The Indian fairly danced with joy, and gave us to understand that, as he could not sleep for pain, he would watch over us. You may suppose we slept much less than we talked. The two strangers gave me an account of their once having been themselves in a similar situation.

“Day came fair and rosy, and with it the punishment of our captives. They were quite sobered. Their feet were unbound, but their arms were still securely tied. We marched them into the woods off the road, and having used them as Regulators were wont to use such delinquents, we set fire to the cabin, gave all the skins and implements to the young Indian warrior, and proceeded, well pleased, towards the settlements.”

## PART XI.

### HISTORICAL SKETCHES.—WESTERN MINERS IN EARLY TIMES.

---

IN the early settlement of the St. Genevieve District, in its mining localities, it was inhabited by pioneers, explorers and miners of a bold, brave, and adventurous character. Many were the encounters and feuds that occurred as to mining rights and land titles. From the times of Renault, Lamotte, Breton and Moses Austin, a spirit of venture and gambling took possession of the inhabitants, which aroused passions, and caused serious disturbances and bloodshed. These bold miners, and explorers, in early times often visited the attractive towns of St. Genevieve and St. Louis, to participate in sports of all kinds. In these two towns, was also the nucleus for the desperate keel-boat men and voyageurs.

In the mining district, there resided, at Shi-boleth, now Washington county, Missouri, a man professing great boldness and bravery, repre-



senting the chivalry of the times. That remarkable man, was John Smith T. as he was called, to distinguish him from the other Smiths of that day.

Smith was a native of Georgia, but came to Missouri from Tennessee. He came to Upper Louisiana prior to 1800. Colonel Smith T. was tall, slight of build, wiry in person, mild and courteous in his manners, but terrible when his passions were aroused by some imagined insult. He had many personal encounters of the most serious and bloody character, and stood unrivaled for skill, undaunted courage and great coolness in those terrible conflicts with his enemies. He kept at his home an armory stocked with arms and weapons of every kind. He was a skilled mechanic, and owned two slaves who were good gunsmiths. He manufactured the best and truest pistols and rifles in the Western country. Colonel Smith T. speculated in lands extensively, but his principal occupation was that of mining.

When he traveled he was always well equipped and armed, followed by his friends rifle in hand. When Aaron Burr contemplated invading Mexico, in 1806, Smith and Governor Henry Dodge went to New Madrid to join the expedition, which was to descend the Mississippi river, under the impression it was a legitimate war; but when at New Madrid they read President Jefferson's proclamation condemning it,

they returned to St. Genevieve and were both arrested, but were released from custody, owing to their mistake in the contemplated invasion of Mexico.

The inhabitants of Upper Louisiana selected Smith to attend to their interests in Congress, and with that view he visited Washington City. Colonel Smith T. was of a roving disposition. He went to Chihuahua to aid to revolutionize Mexico, traversing a wild, vast country, surrounded by dangers. He thence returned to his home.

Colonel Smith T., in the year 1806, was appointed one of the Territorial Judges of the Court of General Quarter Sessions. This court was held in the town of St. Genevieve. He occupied this position for some time.

He attempted in early times, with a company of men to take possession of the Dubuque and Galena lead mines, which at the time were reported to be of fabulous wealth; but he was driven off by tribes of Indians then occupying these lead mines.

In September, 1830, Smith came to St. Genevieve and stopped at an inn kept by William McArthur. While indulging in liquor with one Samuel Ball, a difficulty sprang up between them which proved fatal to Ball. They were at the time the only persons in the bar-room. Mrs. McArthur, the hostess, a brave woman, hearing the report of the pistol, came in and saw Ball

lying dead on the floor. She reprimanded Smith, and demanded of him his pistols. He delivered them and said, "Take them, my daughter." He was immediately arrested and confined in jail, had his trial at St. Genevieve before Circuit Court, and was acquitted, after an able defense by Hon. John Scott. A jurymen named Carron was asked how he could acquit Smith. He replied, "Did not Scott tell them that they must bring a verdict of not guilty?"

Colonel Smith T. had some difficulty with the Perry family, then living at Mine-à-Breton, about some mining claims. One day, while John Perry was on his way toward St. Genevieve, he was overtaken by Smith, who remarked to him that he regretted any difficulty with him, and that they were now alone and could settle the matter, remarking that he had a couple of friends (meaning his pistols). "There, take your choice." Mr. Perry politely thanked him, and declined the offer, as he had business of importance at St. Genevieve which could not be transacted by any other person. Smith remarked that he regretted that it could not be settled in this rational way, after which they proceeded to St. Genevieve together, conversing on different subjects without reference to their difficulties.

### SMITH T. IN A DUEL.

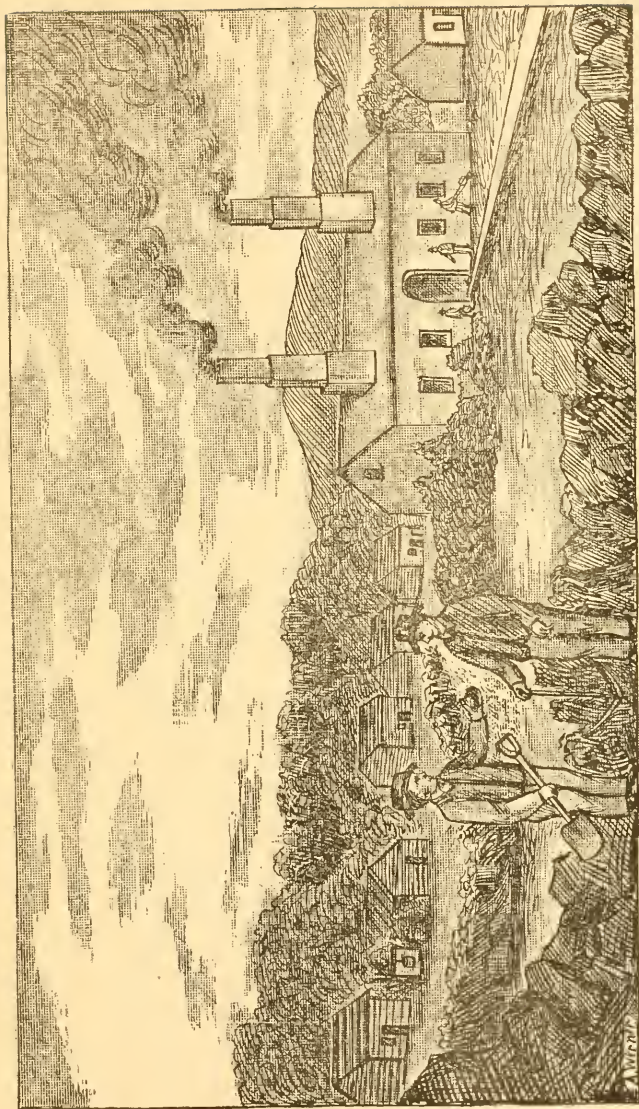
A duel took place between Colonel Smith and Lionel Browne, nephew of Aaron Burr, then living at Potosi, opposite Herculaneum, in Illinois. Colonel Augustus Jones acted as second for Browne, and Colonel McClehan for Smith. Browne was the one who challenged Smith. Lionel Browne was shot in the centre of the forehead, and was instantly killed.

Colonel Smith participated in several desperate encounters which it would be too prolix to relate here, and was always fortunate in these terrible struggles.

He left Missouri owing to his numerous difficulties, accompanied by a faithful slave. He subsequently died on the banks of the Mississippi, in the State of Tennessee. Colonel Smith T. left numerous descendants, many of them now prominent citizens of the State.

Notwithstanding his turbulent character, he was very hospitable at home, and charitable to the poor. His body was removed to Shiloleth, Washington county, Missouri, and afterwards reburied in the city of St. Louis.

Judge H. M. Brackenridge, formerly of Pennsylvania, a traveler, author and jurist, gives this graphic description of Smith :



LEAD FURNACE.



“ One of the diggers at the mines, a man of ferocious character and herculean frame, resolved to assassinate the Colonel, and thus get rid of the floating grant and great monopolist. Taking his rifle, for he was a great shot, he went to the house of Colonel Smith and challenged him to a trial of skill at a mark—the head of a nail—the best in three, distance of sixty yards. The challenge was accepted, and they proceeded some distance from the house, when the ruffian seized the first opportunity to turn the muzzle of his rifle on his unsuspecting companion, but in his haste, the ball passed through the Colonel’s left shoulder without inflicting a mortal wound. He fell. The assailant rushed upon him, and fell with him to the ground; while the Colonel, whose presence of mind never forsook him, drew his dirk, but missing his aim, drove it into his own thigh. He drew it out, struck the assassin on the ribs; the weapon bent, and as a last desperate effort, he drew it across the stomach of the ruffian, inflicting a mortal wound.

The assassin, who had been endeavoring to seize the Colonel by the throat, now released his hold, and they both lay for some time, bathed in blood. The slaves coming up, carried them both into the house. And here it may be mentioned, as a proof of the magnanimity of the Colonel, that by his orders every attention was paid to his treacherous enemy, until he died of his wounds.

## THE YEAR 1811.

---

THE year 1811 was truly a memorable one for the inhabitants of Upper Louisiana, and the many and varied experiences they encountered during that twelve-month, were for a long time a fruitful source of recollections. The following sketches present some of the most interesting :

### THE FLOOD OF THE MISSISSIPPI.

During the summer of 1811, the waters of the Mississippi river rose to an unprecedented height, overflowing all low lying lands, and occasioned great distress to the inhabitants of St. Genevieve, Kaskaskia, and the settlements in the "bottoms." Nearly all, if not all, the lands in cultivation at that time, were in the rich, alluvial bottoms of the Mississippi river, upon which was placed the only dependence of the settlers for such crops as were necessary for the actual subsistence of the inhabitants of this part of the country. All these were totally destroyed, and the long continuance of the overflow making it impossible to sow even late crops, food for man and beast became exceedingly difficult to



obtain, and much suffering and deprivation ensued. Indeed this overflow was only exceeded by the great deluge of 1844, in point of disaster and damage to the fields and plantations of sparse settlements.

### THE COMET OF 1811.

The Comet of this year was one of exceeding brilliance and long duration. It was one of the remarkable comets of the world, and filled the simple people of this region with wonder and awe. It was very large and bright, and possessed a tail of wonderful length and brilliancy.

An old tradition, prevalent in this colony, predicted astonishing and miraculous heavenly appearances about this time, which this comet seemed to fulfill, hence there was no little alarm felt for the future of the country visited by this blazing precursor of fate. Notwithstanding that Aristotle many ages ago taught that comets were mere meteors or exhalations raised in the upper regions of the air, where they blaze for a while and disappear when the meteors they form have been consumed, the people generally looked upon them as signs indicating famine, inundation, war and pestilence. In this belief, the superstitious of Upper Louisiana,—men, women, children, negroes and savages—looked upon

the phenomenon as presaging some dreadful occurrence.

### EARTHQUAKES OF 1811.

Immediately following the Great Comet, on December of that year 1811, shocks of earthquakes, which had created such remarkable convulsions of nature, at New Madrid and its neighborhood, were sensibly felt at St. Genevieve, though no material damage was done by them. Coming, as these throes of nature did, just after the comet, with full information of the devastation and horrible contortions of the earth below here, at New Madrid, they fairly set the people of this part of the country wild with alarm, and prepared them to look for all the evil consequences ascribed to the baneful influence of the erratic celestial luminary in rapid and fatal succession. But as nothing further happened, they settled down to a human indifference of the possibilities of fate, and soon became again the frugal, simple, light-hearted people nature had made them.

### A FAMOUS DUEL.

One of the most melancholy and untortunate tragedies of the year 1811, was the duel between Thomas H. Crittenden and Doctor Walter Fenwick, both residents of St. Genevieve. Critten-

den was a lawyer and a brother of Senator Crittenden, of Kentucky. Doctor Fenwick was an eminent physician, an estimable and polished gentleman. Both were popular and were regarded by the community as brave and gallant men. The cause which led to the fatal encounter was one with which Doctor Fenwick had originally nothing to do, he only being drawn into the quarrel by a chivalric devotion to, and regard for, his brother, Ezekiel Fenwick. A difficulty, the exact nature of which is not known, resulted in a challenge from Ezekiel Fenwick to Thomas H. Crittenden, which was borne to the latter by Doctor Fenwick, as the friend of his brother. For some reason Mr. Crittenden refused to meet Ezekiel Fenwick, whereupon the Doctor deeming the refusal a personal affront, offered himself in his brother's stead, and was accepted. The parties met October 1st, 1811, on Moreau's island, a few miles below St. Genevieve, and opposite Kaskaskia landing; General Henry Dodge and Hon. John Scott were the seconds of the parties. At the first fire Doctor Fenwick fell mortally wounded, and expired a short time afterwards. Mr. Crittenden was unhurt.

Doctor Fenwick is buried in the Catholic graveyard, in the heart of St. Genevieve. No monument but a plain freestone slab marks his last resting place, and the only epitaph upon one of the most accomplished men of his day,

consists of the simple inscription — “ Doctor Walter Fenwick, born 1775, died October 2d, 1811.”

The pistols used on this memorable occasion are now in possession of Mrs. Augustine Ménard the relict of the late Cyprien Ménard. The barrels are twelve inches long, are of a very large bore, and were made by a negro man, a very expert workman, a slave of the notorious John Smith T.

#### FORT CHARTRES IN JUNE, 1811.

During this month and year, a party from St. Genevieve, consisting of Governor Henry Dodge and family, Judge Otto Shrader and lady, Captain Melane and wife, Lewis F. Linn, (afterwards United States Senator from Missouri), with several young men, visited Fort Chartres, Illinois, for the purpose of securing a piece of ordnance from this old Fort, with which to celebrate the approaching Fourth of July of 1811. The party, early one morning, embarked on a keel-boat, manned by several negro men. Poles and sweeps (long oars) were used to propel the boat. Owing to the velocity and force of the current, the boat's progress was necessarily slow and laborious, but the Fort was finally reached, and on disembarking, all the party partook of a sumptuous lunch.

The cannon was soon selected from the crumbling debris of the Fort, but the task of transporting it to the boat was no light one, owing to the want of levers and hoisting appliances. It was of iron, nine feet in length, and very heavy ; but perseverance and hard work finally accomplished its transfer to the keel-boat, after which the party cast loose late in the evening, and floated back to St. Genevieve, without accident or adventure. The sky was cloudless, the full moon shone brightly over the turbid waters of the Mississippi, and the whole party were full of life and spirits over their prize, and the anticipated part it was to play on the great National day.

The boat was met by the people of St. Genevieve, who were delighted at securing the cannon, assisting to unload, mount, and prepare it for the coming event, which was in due time celebrated with great pomp and zeal, the old cannon adding the thunders of its throat to the eloquence of the orators and applause of the spectators.

Subsequently in the year 1840, another Fourth of July was celebrated, and the old Fort Chartres' cannon again called upon to lend its aid in the glorious cause. It was fired several times, until at last it bursted, and injured several persons, among whom were the late Judge Jesse

B. Robbins. His injuries were very serious, and gave him much trouble the remainder of his life.

#### BAND OF OSAGE INDIANS.

During Christmas week of the year 1811, a good deal of apprehension was created by the appearance of a band of Osage savages, in the neighborhood. For they were known as a cruel and barbarous tribe. The parish priest, having occasion to make a trip in the interior of the country, encountered them engaged in orgies of a peculiarly significant character. They were apparently under the influence of intoxicants, decked in their war paint, and the woods resounded with hideous yells and war whoops. Intelligence was quickly spread, that an attack on the village was intended, and preparations were made to resist it. The women, children, and the old were hurried to places of security. The able-bodied portion of the inhabitants flew to arms, and distributed themselves at the most available places of defense. A party of scouts sent out to reconnoitre and watch the Osages, soon returned, after having penetrated the encampment and mingled with the Indians, and reported that they meant no harm to the whites. They were simply a hunting expedition, which were finishing up with a debauch, and dancing

the war dance for their own amusement. This intelligence restored quiet, and brought order out of chaos.

It is not surprising that any unusual occurrence created alarm in this memorable year, for the "Great Flood," the "Comet," the "Earthquake," the "Duel," the sudden appearance of this band of Osages, crowding fast upon one another, were scenes and sights calculated to unsettle the firmest nerves and bravest hearts.

## THE CHALYBEATE SPRINGS.

---

THE Chalybeate Springs, so celebrated several years ago, were situated near the town of St. Genevieve, on the river Aux Vases. They were owned by Judge William James, one of the early pioneers, being a tall and robust Kentuckian.

During their celebrity, these Springs were known far and wide, and were resorted to by seekers after health, as are the Hot and Eureka Springs of to-day. Judge James had erected many buildings and conveniences around the Springs for all necessary purposes, among which was a large arbor of brush and felled saplings for dancing and amusements. He was assiduous in his attention to his guests, and a firm believer in the efficacy of the waters of his Springs. His constant advice was: "Eat sparingly, but drink copiously of the magic waters;" which, but for his well known hospitality, might imply that he meant to care for his larder, at the expense of the water.

During the summer of 1811, some sixty persons visited these Springs, among whom were Judge Otto Shrader and family, of St. Genevieve; Judge Nathaniel Pope, Governor Edwards, of Illinois; Mr. Robert Morrison and lady,



of Kaskaskia, and other distinguished personages.

Judge Shrader and Governor Edwards had great faith in the waters, and made a wager, as to who could consume the greater quantity in a given time. Governor Edwards was a very large man, weighing some three hundred pounds, while Judge Shrader weighed at least one hundred pounds less. They repaired to the Springs, tin cup in hand, and began their bout. In their anxiety to excel each other, they drank too much of the water, and both became very sick. A witness remarked that "they spouted like whales." After this occurrence the Springs lost their popularity.

#### JUDGE SHRADER.

Judge Shrader was a German, and had been a soldier under Archduke Charles. He settled in St. Genevieve in 1809. He was a gentleman of great intellect, and possessed of an excellent education. He was highly respected as an upright and conscientious lawyer, and held the position of one of the Supreme Court Judges under the Territorial Government. He died in St. Louis in 1811, while in attendance upon a Council of the Governor and Territorial Judges.

### JUDGE NATHANIEL POPE.

Judge Nathaniel Pope came to St. Genevieve in 1805 to engage in the practice of the law; removed to Kaskaskia in 1808, but continued to practice in the Courts at St. Genevieve until 1812. He was one of the incorporators of the St. Genevieve Academy, which began its existence in 1808. Judge Pope, was a man of most excellent judgment, a high order of ability, and spotless integrity. He lived in Kaskaskia until 1844, when the great flood of that year inundated all the low lands bordering on the Mississippi river, and caused him to leave Kaskaskia.

Judge Pope was made Secretary, on the organization of the Territory of Illinois in 1809; was subsequently a delegate to Congress from that Territory; became afterward United States District Judge, in which capacity he served for thirty years, giving general satisfaction in his rulings and decisions.

# INDEX.

## PUBLISHER'S PREFACE.

Biography of Hon. Firmin A. Rozier.....	5
---	---

## PART I.

### THE FRENCH DOMINION IN NORTH AMERICA— HOW ACQUIRED AND LOST.

French Missionaries in the Seventeenth Century .. . . . . .	11
Sisters of Charity.....	12
Festival of the Dead among the Primitive Indians.....	12
Memorable Convention between France and the Five Nations.....	14
Marquette and Joliet.....	17
LaSalle and Hennepin.....	19
Discovery of Louisiana.....	24
The Missouri River first opened for Traffic.....	28
The Celebrated Spanish Caravan .. . . . . .	28
The First Mining Ventures.....	29
St. Genevieve an Early Mining Center.....	30
The French and Indian War from 1754 to 1763, known as the Seven Years War .. . . . . .	31
History of Fort Chartres, Fort Gage, and Kaskaskia.....	36
The Town of Kaskaskia.....	43
Prairie du Rocher Cahokia.....	43

## PART II.

### EXPLORATIONS.

Exploration of the Missouri by the French in 1705.....	46
The Santa Fe Caravan of 1720.....	47
Explorations of the Interior of Missouri by M. de Dutisne—1719..	48
Fort Orleans, on an Island on the Missouri River.....	49

## PART III.

### TERRITORY OF LOUISIANA.

New Organization of Louisiana Territory Under Crozat, 1712.....	52
CESSION BY FRANCE TO SPAIN.	
Cession by France of the Louisiana Territory to Spain in 1762.—	
The Parisian and Spanish Code in said Territory.....	55

## PART IV.

### NAVIGATION IN THE WEST.

The Naval Armament of the Spaniards on the Mississippi in early times.—The Western Boatman.....	58
B eusoleil Island.....	60
L'Année des Bateaux.....	62
Spanish Naval Armament.....	63
The Western Boatmen.....	63
Mike Fink, the Notorious Boatman.....	64
Introduction of Steam Power.....	67
Steamboats in 1817.....	68
Missouri River Navigation .....	68
Status of the Navigation of Western Rivers by Steam Power in 1874.	69

## PART V.

### AMERICAN CONQUESTS.

The Capture of Kaskaskia, of Cahokia, and of Vincennes, by Col. Rogers Clark.....	72
Clark's Defense of St. Louis, 1778-80.....	75
History of Fort Jefferson.....	79

## PART VI.

### THE FIVE DISTRICTS.

#### I. THE DISTRICT OF ST. GENEVIEVE.

The Iron Mountain.....	92
Comparative Table of Mineral production.....	95
The Old Town of St. Genevieve.....	96
The Indians around St. Genevieve.....	100
The Sister of Tecumseh.....	.....
A Letter from the Governor to the Chawanons.....	102
Reminiscences of Upper Louisiana.....	105
The First Contract.....	106
Important Order of Governor Delassus.....	108
The Military Organization.....	110
La Nouvelle Bourbon.....	115
The First Church.....	116
The First Religious Records.....	118
Romantic Marriage during the Regime of Spain.....	119
Ancient French Customs.....	120
La Guignolée.....	121
The Common Fields. Ancient Plows and Charettes.....	122
French Dominion and Jurisdiction.....	123
Territorial Inhabitants from 1804 to 1820.....	124

St. Genevieve Academy in 1808 .....	125
The Territorial Courts of St. Genevieve.....	127
Fatal Encounter of Captain De Mun.....	128
Missouri Territorial Assembly.....	129
The Constitutional Convention of 1820.....	130
Population and Commerce of St Genevieve .....	130
Steamboat Catastrophe .....	131
Old St. Genevieve, St. Charles, and Kaskaskia.....	184
Clerks of the St. Genevieve Court.....	138
Sheriffs at St. Genevieve, from 1820 to 1870 .....	128
Grand Celebration of the Anniversary of St. Genevieve, July 21, 1885, at the City of St. Genevieve.....	139

## 2.—THE ST. LOUIS DISTRICT.

Early History of St. Louis.....	142
Early Churches in St. Louis.....	147
St. Louis Invaded by the English and Indians, May 26, 1780....	149
Boat and Cargo Captured by the English and Indians.....	150
British and Indians Allied in War .....	151
L'Année du Coup (The Year of the Blow).....	152
John P. Trudeau's "Chanson".....	154
Declaration of War in 1793, against the Osages, by Zenon Trudeau, Lieutenant-Governor.....	156
Characteristic Anecdotes on the Old St. Louis Inhabitants.....	157
Anecdotes of Carondelet.....	158
St. Louis, from its Foundation in 1764 to 1820.....	158
Bloody Island and its Sanguinary Record.....	160
Remarkable Duels. Benton and Lucas.....	161
The fatal Duel between Major Thomas Biddle, of the United States Army, and Hon. Spencer Pettis, Member of Congress, August 25, 1831.....	162
The Marquis de LaFayette.....	163
Great Fire and Cholera in St. Louis.....	165
The Great Flood of 1844.....	166
The Great Bridge, 1874.....	167
Pierre Liguist Laclede.....	169

The Magistrates of St. Louis up to 1874.	
Chairmen of the Trustees. Mayors.....	166

3.—THE DISTRICT OF CAPE GIRARDEAU.

Original Boundaries .....	170
Commandant Lorimier.....	172
Civil and Military Jurisdiction.....	175
Berthelmy Cousin, the Linguist and Scientific man of the West.....	176
Population.....	177
City of Cape Girardeau.....	178

4.—THE ST. CHARLES DISTRICT.

St. Charles District under the Spaniards in 1767.....	176
Wonderful Picture on the high bluffs of Illinois, from 1673 to 1866..	180
Les Mamelles.. .. .	182
The Cedar Pyramid.....	183
Côte Sans Dessein.....	185
Daniel Boone.....	186

5.—THE NEW MADRID DISTRICT.

Boundaries .....	'189'.....
New Madrid under the Spaniards in 1769 .....	193
Spanish Commandants .....	194
Village of Little Prairie.....	197
New Madrid under the United States Government.....	198
The New Madrid Earthquakes of 1811.....	199
Hon. Lewis F. Linn's Account.....	200
Henry Howe's Account.....	203
Godfrey Lesieur's Account.....	204
Audubon's Account.....	208
Submerged Lands of Missouri.....	210
Report on the Submerged Lands of the State of Missouri, presented by Gen. Rozier at the Grand Convention held at Memphis in 1845.....	
The Town of New Madrid in 1850.....	218
New Town of Madrid.....	218

## PART VII.

### LOUISIANA TERRITORY.

Transfer to Spain .....	220
Retrocession to France.....	221
Purchase by the United States.....	223
Lieutenant-Governor Amos Stoddard Commandant of Upper Louisiana.....	225
Lewis & Clark's Grand Exploration to the Pacific Ocean, May 23, 1806.	227
William Harrison, Governor of Upper Louisiana, from October 1804 to March 1805—The act of Congress of March 26, 1804 .....	231
Act of Congress of March 3, 1805, Creating the Territory of Louisiana	232
First Grand Exploration of Lieutenant Zebulon Montgomery Pike, up to the Sources of the Mississippi River, in 1805.....	235
The Important and Perilous Exploration to the Arkansas, Kansas and Platte Rivers and into the Provinces of New Spain in 1806.....	239
Territory of Louisiana.....	244

## PART VIII.

### MISSOURI TERRITORY—1812.

Named by Act of Congress .....	245
First Council.....	245

#### TERRITORIAL DELEGATES OF MISSOURI TERRITORY.

Hon. Edward Hempstead, First Delegate to Congress from Missouri Territory.....	249
Hon. Rufus Easton, Second Delegate to Congress from Missouri Territory .....	251
John Scott, Third Delegate to Congress from Missouri Territory.....	253
State Organization.....	259



CONSTITUTION OF MISSOURI AND STATE GOVERNMENT  
IN 1820.

Delegates to the Constitutional Convention.....	260
Historical Tables—Governors of the Province of Louisiana at New Orleans, under the Spaniards — Commanders of Upper Louisiana at St. Louis, under the French—Spanish Commandants in Upper Louisiana.....	261
Commandants of Upper Louisiana under the United States.....	262
Governors of Missouri Territory.....	262
Population of Upper Louisiana in 1804.....	262

PART IX.

THE STATE OF MISSOURI.

State Emblems, Devices and Great Seal.....	263
The Five United States Senators—	
1. Governor Henry Dodge.....	266
2. Lewis F. Linn.....	270
3. Senator George W. Jones.....	274
4. Augustus C. Dodge.....	279
5. Lewis V. Bogy.....	282

PART X.

AUDUBON AND ROZIER.

AUDUBON THE ORNITHOLOGIST, AND ROZIER THE  
WESTERN MERCHANT.

Their Travels.....	286
Their Keel-Boat.....	289
Audubon's Great Swan and Bear Story.....	291
Their Voyage up the Mississippi.....	295
Audubon's Miraculous Escape.....	305

## PART XI.

### HISTORICAL SKETCHES.

Western Miners in Early Times .....	312
The Famous John Smith " T " .....	313
Smith " T " in a Duel .....	316

#### THE YEAR 1811.

The Flood of the Mississippi.....	318
The Great Comet of 1811.....	319
The Earthquakes of 1811.....	320
A Famous Duel in 1811 .....	320
Fort Chartres in June, 1811 .....	322
Band of Osage Indians.....	324

#### THE CHALYBEATE SPRINGS.

Judge Shrader.....	327
Judge Nathaniel Pope.....	328

#### ERRATA.

- Page 185. " Mississippi river " should be " Missouri river."  
Page 214. " Owes " should read " West."  
Page 246. Add : " Members of House, John Shrader, Samuel Phillips."  
Page 262. Read, " From Dec. 1812 to July 1813."  
Page 274. John Rice Jones' death should be 1824.  
Page 294. " Beart " should read " Bear."

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

---

PORTRAIT OF HON. FIRMIN A. ROZIER.....	2
INDIANS WATCHING THE APPROACH OF CARTIER'S FLEET.....	12
MARQUETTE INSTRUCTING THE INDIANS.....	20
EARLY PIONEER LIFE IN MISSOURI .....	44
THE HEADQUARTERS OF COMMANDANT VALLÉ AT ST. GENEVIEVE .....	84
THE IRON MOUNTAIN.....	92
THE SISTER OF TECUMSEH.....	100
PILOT KNOB IN 1850.....	132
THE LANDING OF LACLEDE AT ST. LOUIS.....	140
THE PIASA MONSTER.....	164
THE CEDAR PYRAMID.....	172
DANIEL BOONE.....	196
DANIEL BOONE'S CABIN.....	204
LEAD FURNACE.....	316















LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 497 273 9

